

# **CHRIST THE REDEEMER**

*Part 1, Jesus the Lamb of God  
Part2, —Jesus the Near Kinsman*

## **Study Series 4**

**AN IN-DEPTH STUDY OF BIBLE DOCTRINE  
AND  
THE MYSTERY OF THE GOSPEL.**

by

*Ayin Shomer*

Copyright 2007

## PART 1 - *Jesus the Lamb*

### SECTIONS:

1. TRADITIONAL SUBSTITUTION (2)
2. THE LAW OF SACRIFICE (3)
3. THE SACRIFICE OF CHRIST (5)
4. THE SACRIFICE OF ABRAHAM (9)
5. CHRIST'S BLOOD ATONEMENT (14)
6. SUBSTITUTE TEACHERS (26)
7. ON THE CROSS WITH CHRIST (41)
8. BAPTISM OF DEATH (55)
9. THE REVELATION OF CHRIST (66)

The overall study of the redemption of Jesus Christ is a very comprehensive doctrine that covers a number of important works. In fact, the doctrine of redemption covers His entire work upon Earth for mankind, including the three manifestations of Christ, which are: (1) Christ's first advent; (2) His manifestation to the believer for authentic salvation; (3) His Second advent. And we find five major facets of his redemptive work fulfilled upon the cross: **(1) Atonement payment; (2) Redemption purchase; (3) Defeat of principalities; (4) Establishment of the Royal Priesthood; (5) Return and restitution of all things.** In Scripture, '5' is the number for redemption.

This first part of the redemption study, probes into what the Holy Bible actually teaches concerning the substitutionary work of Christ's atonement for mankind. The modern doctrine of *Substitution* is actually an adulteration of the doctrine of *Atonement*. Christ's atonement is the first major part of the comprehensive Biblical doctrine of redemption. When we compare the Scriptures themselves to what is being taught, accepted and believed in Christianity today concerning Christ's atonement, we find a reversal that SHAKES THE VERY FOUNDATION OF MODERN CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY. We will find that the modern version of *Substitution* actually opposes Christ and what He did for us on the cross. We will find it results in a total perversion of GRACE just as Jude warned. A "damnable heresy" that goes UNDETECTED except by FEW Christians who obey the commands of Christ, and dare to search for the truth themselves. It is 'damnable' because it blinds all who embrace it, believing they are saved when IN TRUTH they are not.

This doctrinal study will of course come as a SHOCK to the 'traditional' Christian who believes CHRIST DIED IN THEIR PLACE; that nothing else is required to receive eternal salvation except to BELIEVE Jesus is the son of God. The evidence their belief is by living the appropriate Christian life. But the proof is clear, and the result is sure, JESUS DID NOT DIE IN OUR STEAD! HE DID NOT TAKE UP OUR CROSS, HE ONLY TOOK UP HIS. HE SAID WE HAVE TO TAKE UP OUR OWN CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM. This study proves beyond any doubt that **Jesus was the substitute for the sacrifice for SIN, but did NOT die as substitute for the SINNER,** and reveals the harm this error is causing.

## Christ the Redeemer

Because this 'TRADITION' is so deeply rooted in modern Christian teaching, we will need to first take a brief look at the traditional version of the doctrine of *Substitution*. Then, it will be compared to what the Scriptures actually teach.

### 1. TRADITIONAL SUBSTITUTION.

The doctrine of *Substitution* is claimed to be **THE HEART** of modern Christianity, and so it is. Its application in modern Christian theology is declared in a well known book called: *All the Doctrines of the Bible* by Herbert Lockyer.

---

“Turning to Christ, we believe **His substitutionary work to be the heart of the Gospel**. In fact, **it is a glorious Gospel in itself**. While many theories of the cross have been advanced, **the simplest unfolding of it is the truth of Christ dying in our room and stead**. C.H. Spurgeon was fond of saying that *his* theology could be summarized in the four words, ‘**He died for me.**’” [From the section on the *Doctrine of Substitution*, pg. 183, emphasis added]

---

It is going to be proved that the modern version of the doctrine of *Substitution* is the HEART of modern **Christianity's FALSE salvation doctrine**. In Matthew 7, Jesus rejects the 'MANY' Christians. We also find the Church of Laodicea, (representing the Church at the end of the age), has Jesus vomiting them out of his body. Peter also expresses the same, that the **majority** of Christians follow after the false Christian preachers and teachers all the way to eternal ruin. The only way this could happen is by false salvation doctrine embraced by the overall Christian majority.

The common salvation doctrine basically teaches that the GRACE of God freely gives salvation to everyone who simply believes Jesus is the Christ, and via a "sinners prayer" all is required is to admit they are a sinner and ask Jesus to save them. They claim anything else in addition to this simple belief or 'trust' is considered a WORK or LEGALISM. Their overall assumption is when Christ came, He abolished the law by dying on the cross **IN OUR PLACE, suggesting in the place of our dying on a cross**. "We must be willing to accept what He did for us", they say. A typical Christian tract called: "GOD'S SIMPLE PLAN OF SALVATION", makes this claim:

---

"Although we cannot understand how, God said **my sins and your sins** were laid upon Jesus and **He died in our place**. He became **our substitute**. It is true. God cannot lie."  
["GOD'S SIMPLE PLAN OF SALVATION", Lifegate, Inc., Montrovia, Indiana, Copyright: 1991, emphasis theirs]

---

On the surface, that sounds correct, but when we dig into this doctrine in view of the scriptures, we find serious contradiction. Webster defines "SUBSTITUTE" as: "**One person put in the place of another to answer the SAME PURPOSE.**"

## PART 1 - *Jesus the Lamb*

We are going to find that the application of this definition is the basis of a **STRONG DELUSION**. Even though the word "substitute" is not found in the King James Version Bible, its use (according to Mr. Lockyer), is based upon Genesis chapter 22 where a ram was placed upon Abraham's altar in the "**stead**" of Isaac. The Hebrew word "stead" is Strong's number H8478, *tachath*, which means: **in the room of, in lieu of, for the sake of**. All of which essentially mean: SUBSTITUTE. We will explore this concept in-depth in *Section 4*.

To say: "Christ died **FOR US**", **IS a scriptural truth**, as we will find out. But the phrase "FOR US" is well qualified by Scripture. But, why has "**FOR US**" been changed to "**INSTEAD OF US**", as Mr. Lockyer and most Bible teachers consistently declare? Where is that concept qualified by scripture?

**"THINK NOT THAT I AM COME TO DESTROY THE LAW,**  
**OR THE PROPHETS: I AM NOT COME TO DESTROY,**  
***but to fulfil."***  
***(Matthew 5:17)***

This is an important statement in view of REDEMPTION. Since Christ came to FULFILL the LAW, then we first need to briefly look at what Old Testament law required for the sacrifice for sins. We always find that God operates within His own laws which is why He is considered a JUST God and not a respecter of persons, (Rom 2:11). But what exactly was the sacrifice for? How did it apply to the sinner? This is NOT to argue the "fine points of the law". These are imperative questions and in order to understand what the atonement of Christ was really about, we need to briefly look to the Old Testament concerning atonement.

### 2. THE LAW OF SACRIFICE.

***"And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and WITHOUT***  
***SHEDDING OF BLOOD IS***  
***NO REMISSION."***  
***(Hebrews 9:22)***

The REMISSION of sins under the old covenant was the FORGIVENESS of offenses against the laws and ordinances of God. According to Old Testament law, in order for God to forgive a person of their sins, they had to bring a **suitable sacrifice** to the Levite priests and sacrificed "BY THE LAW" which is a very important point. As Paul indicates, it is the **blood** that brings the remission of sin. Note that it is **NOT the blood of the sinner, BUT THE BLOOD of the sinner's SACRIFICE**.

Therefore according to law, a person would die in guilt of their sins except they had forgiveness through God's system of sacrifice. This act had to be ACCORDING TO GOD'S ORDAINED LAW. God accepted the death of an innocent and physically perfect lamb to remit the sins FOR sinners.

## Christ the Redeemer

This sacrificial system remained in effect until the cross of Christ. Jesus even told those He healed to offer a sacrifice of thanksgiving upon the altar for their healing, (Luke 2:24).

**"IF HIS OFFERING BE A BURNT SACRIFICE OF THE HERD, let him offer a male without blemish: HE SHALL OFFER IT OF HIS OWN VOLUNTARY WILL at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation before the LORD."**

**"And he shall put his hand upon the head of the burnt offering;**

**AND IT SHALL BE ACCEPTED FOR HIM  
TO MAKE ATONEMENT FOR HIM."**

*(Leviticus 1:3-4)*

The word "ATONEMENT" is H3722, *kaphar* (kaw-far'), which means: **to cover; fig. to expiate or condone, to placate or cancel, appease, make atonement, cleanse, disannul, forgive, be merciful, pacify, pardon, to pitch, purge away, put off, make reconciliation.** This passage has a great prophetic application to Christ. But notice first that the sacrifice must be offered by **free will choice** of the one who will be **atoned for**. Second, the ceremonial laying on of hands to **transfer guilt for acceptance**. Third, the atonement is **FOR HIM**, not **INSTEAD OF** him. FOR it takes **innocent blood** of an amoral sacrifice FOR the **redemption PAYMENT**, but not as a **SUBSTITUTE for the sinner's death**. No where in Old Testament law did God ever require a person to SHED THEIR OWN BLOOD FOR THEIR OWN ATONEMENT. To say that Christ died "**instead of us**", is to imply there was such a thing as **self-atonement**.

**"FOR THE LIFE OF THE FLESH IS IN THE BLOOD:  
AND I HAVE GIVEN IT TO YOU UPON THE ALTAR  
TO MAKE AN ATONEMENT FOR YOUR SOULS:**

**FOR IT IS THE BLOOD  
THAT MAKETH AN ATONEMENT  
FOR THE SOUL."**

*(Leviticus 17:11)*

Read this verse carefully till its meaning is clear. What makes atonement possible? BLOOD. Why? because LIFE of the flesh is in the blood, and God ONLY RECEIVES the life's blood UPON THE ALTAR. The payment is LIFE FOR LIFE, (Ex 21:23) Whose LIFE has to be shed upon the altar that God gave?

## **PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

The SINNER'S SACRIFICE, NOT THE SINNER. Man's blood is polluted from the FALL of Adam. The blood of an amoral creature is guiltless of the transgression of Adam.

Without sacrifices, all would have died in their sins. Through the law of sacrifice, God's people had forgiveness of sins, **but they still faced death and judgment.** "**For the wages of sin is death...**", (Rom 6:23). The word "wages" is G3800, (*opsonion*), which simply means **payment**. God gave the system of sacrifice for an avenue of His mercy toward His own people. That "system" was LAW. The shed blood of the guiltless animal was accepted by God as **payment FOR** the sins of the sinner BECAUSE that is the law God gave to Israel. Did God ever say one must shed their own blood for forgiveness of their own sins, then have the option to SUBSTITUTE an animal in the place of their death? If an Israelite under Old Testament law crucified himself upon a cross for atonement, would God have accepted it? No because that is NOT the system God gave, and like Cain it would be an **inferior sacrifice**. **ONLY** a specified sacrifice given by free will choice "**by the law**" was acceptable for atonement to God.

Jesus Christ came to fulfill the LAW. By comparing the ministry and crucifixion of Christ to Old Testament law, it is easily seen how Jesus FULFILLED all points of the sacrifice. Thus through these fulfillments we see how God worked atonement for mankind via His own law and confirming Jesus' statement concerning His fulfilling the law. The prophetic comparison of Christ to the law is also crucial in understanding the true Biblical doctrine of *Substitution*.

There were SENTENCES prescribed for breaking capital laws, such as murder, as we also have today. These were laws of the land with pre-conceived judgments of sentencing given for "criminal" behavior and control of the ungodly and society as a whole. The atonement of a sacrifice was for sins in both thought and deed against God by which the children of Israel sought reconciliation with God. In other words, the Gentiles and the ungodly did not offer sacrifices to JEHOVAH God, they were only for His own people, His priests and His rulers. When the law came, the ALTAR also came. Under the law of God without the ALTAR, there would have been no forgiveness, mercy, or hope for the people of Israel. Neither would there be a saving Messiah for the law of sacrifice made the ATONEMENT of mankind possible through Jesus Christ. All would die guilty before a just and holy God. God's law teaches us what both sin and the divine love of God is. Therefore we find the law holy, just, and good. A schoolmaster to bring us to the knowledge of sin and truth, and to live a life pleasing to God, (Gal 3:24-25).

### **3. THE SACRIFICE OF CHRIST.**

First it was shown that under Old Testament law, the sacrifice was selected by free will choice for atonement by the one offering the sacrifice. Since this is true, and the fact that Jesus said he came to fulfill the law and prophets, then we should find total confirmation of this in the New Testament.

## Christ the Redeemer

*"Therefore doth my Father love me, because  
**I LAY DOWN MY LIFE, THAT I MIGHT TAKE IT AGAIN.**"*

***"NO MAN TAKETH IT FROM ME, BUT I LAY IT DOWN OF MYSELF.  
I HAVE POWER TO LAY IT DOWN, AND I HAVE POWER TO TAKE IT AGAIN. This  
commandment have I received of my Father."  
(John 10:17-18)***

According to John, Jesus **by His own free will** chose to offer himself as the sacrifice, thus fulfilling that requirement of law. How could Jesus offer himself as the sacrifice if God gave the altar? First of all, Jesus was **not** a sinner. He did not need atonement to reconcile Himself to God, because He was born reconciled. Just as God gave the altar for the old covenant, God gave His only begotten son for the new covenant, (John 3:16). Jesus brought the new covenant, (Ezek 36: 24-27; Jer 31:31-34; Heb 8:8-13). And God was able to forever fulfill the law of the altar through Jesus Christ. Jesus substituted himself as an amoral lamb without spot or blemish, [1 Pet 1:18-19]. His blood was free of guilt and the cross was the altar "without the camp", (Heb 13:11-13). Therefore, Jesus could be accepted FOR the atonement and the payment for redemption of mankind, once and for all time for He ever intercedes to God on our behalf. ***The CROSS became the new altar of sacrifice, THE CROSS IS THE ALTAR OF THE NEW COVENANT!***

*"And walk in [agape] love, as Christ also hath [agape] loved us,  
and hath **GIVEN HIMSELF FOR US**  
an **OFFERING AND A SACRIFICE TO GOD**  
for a sweetsmelling savour."  
(Ephesians 5:2)*

Next, the word "SACRIFICE" is *thusia*, which means: **a sacrifice victim**. The lawmaker Himself who is God, accepted His only Son's choice of laying down His own life AS AN OFFERING AND SACRIFICE FOR THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE. Notice that Christ is the VICTIM, which Random House defines: "**a living creature sacrificed in religious rites**". "FOR US" is well qualified in this verse as an "offering and a sacrifice to God" FOR the sins of sinful man.

*"Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump,  
as ye are unleavened.  
**FOR EVEN CHRIST OUR PASSOVER IS SACRIFICED FOR US:**  
(1 Corinthians 5:7)*

This verse totally qualifies that Jesus SUBSTITUTED Himself for the **SACRIFICIAL LAMB**. Christ died FOR US, NOT INSTEAD OF US. He died IN THE STEAD OF (substitute for) THE **PASSOVER LAMB**. The word "PASSOVER" is *pascha*, and in this context it means: **the special sacrifice connected with Passover**.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Jesus literally became the old covenant *atonement* so the law could be ultimately fulfilled in and through Him.

***"For there is one God, and ONE MEDIATOR between God and men,  
THE MAN CHRIST JESUS;"***

***"WHO GAVE HIMSELF A RANSOM FOR ALL,  
to be testified in due time." (1 Tim 2:5-6)***

The word "RANSOM" is very interesting. In the Greek it is Strong's no. G487, "antilutron", which simply means: **a redemption-price**. But the word "antilutron" is a compound of two words: G473 (*anti*), which DOES mean **INSTEAD OF, in the room of, or SUBSTITUTE**; and G3083 (*lutron*), which means: **redemption price**. **THIS QUALIFIES THAT JESUS, BY HIS OWN CHOICE, GAVE HIMSELF "FOR US" AS A...**

### **SUBSTITUTE REDEMPTION PRICE,**

**TO REDEEM MAN ACCORDING TO KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW, AND AS AN ATONEMENT FOR OUR SINS AS A SUBSTITUTE SACRIFICE.** These are two vastly DIFFERENT applications of the same payment that should not be confused. **Atonement** is a sacrificial **payment** for sin, and **redemption** is where a near-kinsman [Christ] **purchased** his kin [human race] out of bondage. **Christ's blood was both a payment and a purchase.** The 'purchase' aspect of redemption is studied in *Part 2*. The phrase "FOR US" will be further qualified. Here are a few more verses showing consistency to what has been shown thus far.

***"But God commendeth his love toward us, in that,  
while WE WERE YET SINNERS, Christ died FOR US."  
(Romans 5:8)***

***"Who gave himself FOR US, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works."  
(Titus 2:14)***

***"Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church,  
and gave himself FOR IT;"  
(Ephesians 5:25)***

***For he hath made him to be sin FOR US, who knew no sin;  
that WE MIGHT BE MADE the righteousness of God IN HIM.  
(2 Corinthians 5:21)***



## Christ the Redeemer

**IF** the term “FOR US” means “INSTEAD OF” as modern theology would have it, then we would have to interpret Paul as saying: **CHRIST BECAME SIN INSTEAD OF US**. How can that be? For we were **ALREADY BORN IN SIN!** The **SACRIFICIAL LAMB** was accepted by God **FOR** the **payment of SINS** of the one eternal offering. The lamb was slain **FOR US, FOR OUR SINS, not** to die **IN THE PLACE OF OUR DYING**.

***“But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour;  
that he BY THE GRACE of God should  
TASTE DEATH FOR EVERY MAN.”***  
(Hebrews 2:9)

This verse can be easily misread. Again, Christ tasted death “FOR” every man. If you **SUBSTITUTE** “INSTEAD OF” for the word “FOR”, then look how it **TOTALLY CHANGES** the entire meaning of what Christ actually did for us. We will also see how such an error **CHANGES WHAT GRACE MEANS**. The following verses also qualifies “FOR” and further proves it refers to the sacrificial atonement and **NOT** a **SUBSTITUTE** for **THE SINNER**:

***“For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that  
Christ DIED FOR OUR SINS according to the scriptures;”***  
(1 Corinthians 15:3)

***“Who gave himself FOR OUR SINS, that he might deliver us from this  
present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:”***  
(Galatians 1:4)

Should we say here that Christ “gave himself **INSTEAD OF** our sins”? Does that make sense to you?

***“Neither by the blood of goats and calves, BUT BY HIS OWN BLOOD HE ENTERED  
IN ONCE INTO THE HOLY PLACE, HAVING OBTAINED ETERNAL  
REDEMPTION FOR US.”***  
(Hebrews 9:12)

Or, should we say here that Christ “obtained eternal redemption **INSTEAD OF US**”? Does that make sense either? Then Christ **ONLY** has redemption. Jesus himself already possessed eternal redemption, and his followers can only obtain eternal redemption **THROUGH HIM, IF** they are in **TRUE** spiritual union with Him. Just as the Old Testament makes it clear what sacrifices are and what they are for, so does the New Testament make it clear concerning Christ’s role as the **SUBSTITUTE SACRIFICE**.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Even Isaiah foretold Christ would be the **SIN OFFERING**, (Is 53:10).

**JESUS GAVE HIMSELF AS THE ONE-TIME ETERNAL SUBSTITUTE FOR THE ATONING SACRIFICE.** It does not say He “entered in once into the holy place, HAVING **DIED** INSTEAD OF US”. **No where** does the scriptures say or imply that Christ died so that WE DO NOT HAVE TO DIE. In fact, we will find that Jesus clearly said just the OPPOSITE. For **WE MUST DIE** a spirit-soul death upon a spiritual CROSS in order to be given NEW SPIRITUAL LIFE.

*“Then said Jesus unto his disciples,*

***IF ANY MAN WILL COME AFTER ME, LET HIM DENY HIMSELF, AND TAKE UP HIS CROSS, AND FOLLOW ME.”***

***“FOR WHOSOEVER WILL SAVE HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT:  
AND WHOSOEVER WILL***

***LOSE HIS LIFE***  
***FOR MY SAKE SHALL FIND IT.”***  
*(Matthew 16:24-25)*

This passage reveals much to the true seeker. First notice WHO Jesus directs this command to: **HIS DISCIPLES, Christian believers**, (Acts 11:26). This is one of MANY verses that prove that CONVERSION to Christ and Christianity is NOT regeneration. The word “LOSE” in verse 25 is *apollumi* (ap-ol’-loo-mee) which means: **to destroy fully, to perish, literally or figuratively TO DIE.** The root words mean: **to separate by ruin, DEATH, punishment, or destruction.** So contrary to modern Christian doctrine, Jesus DOES command we DIE for His sake, so that we might be given NEW LIFE. Wherein does scripture say He died so that WE DO NOT HAVE TO DIE? Would He not contradict Himself?

#### 4. THE SACRIFICE OF ABRAHAM.

Now that it is established what Christ’s role was as the atoning sacrifice in order to fulfill old covenant law, we are going to consider the example of Abraham’s sacrifice of Isaac. Modern Christianity claims **this is** the Biblical example upon which their doctrine of *Substitution* is based.

---

“We speak of Isaac as a type of Christ, who as God’s only begotten Son, was obedient unto death, and so He is. But Christ is also seen in **the ram offered up as Isaac’s substitute.** As the consecrated Ram, **Christ the Substitute was offered up in our stead.**” [*All the Doctrines of the Bible*, pg. 184; emphasis added]

---

## Christ the Redeemer

The Biblical story of Abraham offering up Isaac for a sacrifice is predominately used to support the modern doctrine of *Substitution* by which Christ is taught as dying IN OUR PLACE. Notice how the modern doctrine compares Isaac, Christ, and the substitute ram.

Can you see here where the substitution concept is twisted around? **Isaac is the sacrifice upon the altar FOR ABRAHAM.** Isaac was to die on an altar as his father's sacrifice to God. Then, the ram steps in as a **substitute**. Who did the ram SUBSTITUTE FOR? Mr. Lockyer first identifies correctly that the ram was substituted for Isaac, then he contradicts himself by concluding that WE are Isaac (the sacrifice), which is SELF ATONEMENT.

Since he used Christ to symbolize both Isaac and the ram, then who does Abraham represent? This implies WE are the sacrifice and Christ substitutes US as the sacrifice. But then, who was Isaac being put to death for? Does the actual story of Abraham's sacrifice support the modern interpretation as claimed? Or is it misinterpreted by twisting it out of context? Let's explore this a little further.

*"And it came to pass after these things,  
that God did TEMPT Abraham, and said unto him,  
Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. And he said,  
Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the  
land of Moriah;*

***and OFFER HIM there  
FOR A BURNT OFFERING**  
upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of."  
(Genesis 22:1-2)*

*"And Abraham stretched forth his hand,  
**AND TOOK THE KNIFE TO SLAY HIS SON.**"  
(Genesis 22:10)*

*"And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him:  
**for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy  
son, thine only son from me.**"*

*"And Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him **a ram**  
caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and **TOOK THE RAM,** and  
**offered him up for a burnt OFFERING***

***IN THE STEAD OF HIS SON.**"  
(Genesis 22:12-13)*

The phrase "BURNT OFFERING" is 'olah (o-law'), which means: **sacrifice**. Obviously the **sacrifice** here was Isaac, and Abraham was the one told to OFFER the sacrifice of his only son. Notice that Isaac did not offer himself up for his own

## PART 1 - *Jesus the Lamb*

sacrifice, but Isaac was **the sacrifice FOR ABRAHAM**. **A very important point.** Abraham did not offer Isaac up for sins, but God was TESTING THE FAITH of Abraham and commanded him to do it, (James 2:21-23).

Now was Isaac to die **for OR instead of** ABRAHAM? The fate of your soul may depend on your understanding of this simple point. Then steps in the **SUBSTITUTE**. The word "STEAD" is *tachath* (takh'-ath), which is defined: **in lieu of, instead, in the room of, stead of**. These are the same definitions as 'SUBSTITUTE'. Was the RAM sent by God to die INSTEAD OF Abraham's dying? Or was the ram sent to die INSTEAD OF Abraham's SACRIFICE who was Isaac? WHICH WAS IT? Modern theology wants us to believe that Isaac represents Abraham. Who does the CHURCH represent: Isaac or Abraham?

**"By faith Abraham, WHEN HE WAS TRIED,**  
**OFFERED UP ISAAC:**  
**and he that had received the promises offered up**  
**HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON."**  
**(Hebrews 11:17)**

1. This was a **test** of Abraham's faith in God **after** receiving the promises;
2. The sacrifice is offered for the sake of Abraham, not Isaac;
3. God substituted the ram in the place of Isaac; but Abraham himself was never the sacrifice. Isaac was the sacrifice to die FOR Abraham's testing, but not as a substitute FOR Abraham's DEATH.

The illustration of Abraham offering up Isaac is a beautiful portrayal of the unconditional divine love of God. God offered up His only son as the SACRIFICE **FOR** US in the place of the Passover lamb. God did this so we might have redemption, reconciliation, and forgiveness of sins THROUGH His Son.

**Conclusion:** We find the example of *substitution* in the Biblical story of Abraham offering up Isaac totally **CONTRADICTS** the interpretation used in the modern Christian doctrine of *Substitution*. The contradiction is then applied to Christ's work of the cross whereby it is falsely claimed: "**WE DO NOT HAVE TO PICK UP OUR CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM INTO DEATH BECAUSE CHRIST DIED INSTEAD OF US HAVING TO DIE. WE DO NOTHING, ONLY ACCEPT WHAT CHRIST DID FOR US BY FAITH AND WE ARE SAVED!**" ...Such is strong delusion.

Next are a few of the verses of scripture that further verify that Jesus took on the role the SUBSTITUTE for the SACRIFICIAL LAMB. This proves as well there is a consistency in scripture regarding Christ's *substitutionary* work.

## Christ the Redeemer

*"He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth:*

**HE IS BROUGHT AS A LAMB TO THE SLAUGHTER,**

*and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb,*

*so he openeth not his mouth."*

**"BUT HE WAS WOUNDED FOR OUR TRANSGRESSIONS,**

*he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed."*

*"All we like sheep have gone astray;*

*we have turned every one to his own way; and*

**the LORD hath laid on him THE INIQUITY OF US ALL."**

*(Isaiah 53:5-7)*

*"Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?"*

**"And then will I profess unto them, I NEVER KNEW YOU: depart from me, ye that work INIQUITY."**

*(Matthew 7:22-23)*

According to Isaiah, Jesus was wounded, bruised, and scourged for our INIQUITY. That being true, then in Matthew 7 **why does Jesus himself send the majority of Christians away because their Christian works were works of iniquity?** Was it because Jesus was the SUBSTITUTE sacrifice, and not a substitute for them? Could it be that the substitutionary work is valid ONLY through true experiential union with Christ? The "MANY" call Jesus "LORD". They believed they had a real "personal relationship" with Him. They dedicated their life to Him, but in the end it was in VAIN. They were dedicated to Christ's work upon earth to spread the gospel. They have the power of the Holy Spirit to cast out devils and perform other miracles. They did it all through the name of the Lord Jesus Christ who died FOR THEM.

**Yet Jesus Himself rejects them at judgment FOREVER. WHY?** Suppose the 'MANY', (the overall majority of Christians), misinterpreted "FOR US" as meaning "IN OUR STEAD"? That the preaching of taking up THEIR CROSS and undergoing the BAPTISM INTO DEATH, was foolishness to them? That the majority of Christians accepted a salvation doctrine that contained damnable heresies?

Let's look further how Jesus was regarded as the SACRIFICIAL LAMB:

*"And he shall take away all the fat thereof, as the fat of THE LAMB is taken away from the SACRIFICE of the peace offerings; and the priest shall burn them upon the altar, according to the offerings made by fire unto the LORD: **AND THE PRIEST SHALL MAKE AN ATONEMENT FOR HIS SIN THAT HE HATH COMMITTED,***

**PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

**AND IT SHALL BE FORGIVEN HIM."**

*(Leviticus 4:35)*

*"The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith,*

***Behold THE LAMB of God,  
which taketh away the sin of the world."***

*(John 1:29, 36)*

*"The place of the scripture which he read was this,*

***He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and LIKE A LAMB dumb  
before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:"***

*(Acts 8:32)*

*"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things,  
as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from  
your fathers; But with the precious BLOOD of Christ,*

***AS OF A LAMB without blemish and without spot:"***

*(1 Peter 1:18-19)*

*"Saying with a loud voice,*

***WORTHY IS THE LAMB THAT WAS SLAIN***

*to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour,  
and glory, and blessing."*

*(Revelation 5:12)*

***"And they overcame him BY THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB,***

***and by the word of their testimony;  
and they loved not their lives unto the death."***

*(Revelation 12:11)*

*"And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not  
written in the book of life of*

***THE LAMB SLAIN FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD."***

*(Revelation 13:8)*

Seven times here is this testimony of Scripture that Jesus represents the sacrificial lamb. Has a lamb ever had to die for its own sins? No, a lamb is an amoral creature without sin, guiltless from the CURSE of the FALL of Adam and Eve. Was Christ put to death for His own sins? No, Christ Himself was without sin, (Heb 4:15). There should be no debate or doubt that Christ was the SUBSTITUTE for the SACRIFICIAL LAMB which shed His blood FOR ATONEMENT OF OUR SINS.

**THAT IS AS FAR AS THE DOCTRINE OF SUBSTITUTION WAS INTENDED TO GO. MODERN CHRISTIANITY HAS STRETCHED CHRIST'S SUBSTITUTIONARY WORK BEYOND ITS BIBLICAL AND ESTABLISHED LIMITS.**

## Christ the Redeemer

**THEY HAVE THROUGH THEIR DAMNABLE DOCTRINES PERVERTED THE WORK OF CHRIST AND CHANGED THE GRACE OF GOD INTO LACIVIOUSNESS, AN UNRESTRAINED GRACE THAT HAS NO REGARD FOR WHAT IS RIGHT OR TRUE. THEY HAVE FABRICATED A GRACE THAT IS FULL OF MALICE AND DECEIT. A FIGNED GRACE WHICH DECEIVES MANY. ANYONE FOLLOWING THIS TYPE OF CHRISTIANITY MUST REPENT OR DIE IN THEIR SINS BECAUSE THEY MAY FIND, (LIKE THE MANY OF MATTHEW 7), THEY ONLY 'BELIEVED' THEY WERE SAVED BY CHRIST'S ATONEMENT, BUT IN-TRUTH WERE NOT.**

### 5. CHRIST'S BLOOD ATONEMENT.

We have already seen how the ONLY redemption *payment* God accepts is BLOOD of a lawful sacrifice which was slain without the camp, (Heb 13:10-13). Christ's shedding of His blood "without the gate" accomplished both the atonement of sins via the LAW OF SACRIFICE AND PASSOVER, as well as the *purchase* of the human race, via KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW which we shall explore in *Part 2*.

A common saying among Christian fundamentalists is: "**I am saved by the blood**". As shocking as it may seem, that statement is very conditional. By the Grace of God the shedding of Christ's blood MADE JUSTIFICATION POSSIBLE, (Rom 5:9); and even though the shed blood of Christ made salvation possible IT IS NOT SALVATION ITSELF. **True salvation is the bestowment of divine agape love through spiritual union with Christ and God the Father**, (Jn 17:23,26; Rom 13:8,10; 1 Jn 3:1). Jesus Himself gave the direct command for being born again in Matthew chapter seven. He has perfect right to do so for Christ is the Lord that bought us by shedding His blood.

His BLOOD not only made permanent atonement for sins, but it also purchased exclusive rights to all men of all nations. Both the DEAD and the LIVING, (Rom 14:9). The final act of the Kinsman-redeemer law is that we MUST RECKON with our REDEEMER, (Lev 25:50).

**"FOR THIS IS MY BLOOD OF THE NEW TESTAMENT,  
WHICH IS SHED FOR MANY FOR THE REMISSION OF SINS."  
(Matthew 26:28)**

The blood of Christ is the legal binder of the new covenant. The word "TESTAMENT" is *diatheke*, which is: **a contract, a covenant, or testament**. This proves that THE CHURCH is subject to ALL the same terms of God's NEW COVENANT made with Israel in Ezekial 36. The Gentile church is grafted in as the wild olive branch, (Romans 11). It is ONLY OUT OF THE NEW COVENANT THAT THE TRUE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST IS BORN whether Jew or Gentile. Therefore the ARROGANCE that claims Christ's commands are only for Israel and "DO NOT APPLY TO THE CHURCH" comes from the doctrines and commandments of men. Strong's defines 'REMISSION' as not only forgiveness of sins but also a deliverance or freedom from sin which is what we need to explore next.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

**"BEING JUSTIFIED FREELY BY HIS GRACE  
THROUGH THE REDEMPTION THAT IS IN CHRIST JESUS:  
WHOM GOD HATH SET FORTH TO BE A PROPITIATION THROUGH FAITH IN HIS  
BLOOD, TO DECLARE HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS  
FOR THE REMISSION OF SINS THAT ARE PAST,  
through the forbearance of God;"**  
(Romans 3:24-25)

The word "PROPIIATION" is *hilasterion* (hil-as-tay'-ree-on), which means: **an expiatory, i.e. an atoning victim**. The root word is *hilaskomai* (hil-as'-kom-ahee), which is: **to atone for sin, make reconciliation for**. Now we get to the root of what Christ's atonement really means, it was for RECONCILIATION of man to God through Christ's innocent blood WHERE Jesus was the ATONING VICTIM. But this is only PART of the reconciliation. It is only when we are IN Christ and He IN us are we reconciled to God the Father. According to the *kinsman-redeemer* law, **man must FIRST reconcile himself to the ONE that purchased him out of bondage who is Christ** as will be proven in *Part 2*.

All are born with the spirit of death which is passed down from Adam, and death is separation from God. To salvage this condition, God sent his Son to RECONCILE God toward man, (Luke 2:14, Jn 3:16), BECAUSE He *agape* loved what He created. According to the Random House dictionary, the word 'atonement' comes from the phrase "**at one in harmony with**". Christ forever appeased the wrath of God against those who come through the reconciliation that is through Christ, and ONLY through Christ. Jesus Christ's atonement was for our past 'sins'. **Contrary to popular belief, the atonement of Christ is not what makes one SAVED! FORGIVENESS OF SINS IS NOT SPIRITUAL REGENERATION.** At this point a distinction should be made between the 'SINS' we commit, and the FALLEN spirit that generates those sins.

**"KEEP BACK THY SERVANT ALSO FROM PRESUMPTUOUS SINS;  
LET THEM NOT HAVE DOMINION OVER ME:  
THEN SHALL I BE UPRIGHT, AND I SHALL BE INNOCENT FROM  
THE GREAT TRANSGRESSION."**

**"Let the words of MY MOUTH, and THE MEDITATION OF MY HEART,  
be acceptable in thy sight, O LORD, my strength, and my redeemer."**  
(Psalms 19:13-14)

Notice carefully how a distinction is made between "PRESUMPTUOUS SINS" and what is called "THE GREAT TRANSGRESSION". The word 'PRESUMPTUOUS' is H2086, *zed* (zade'), which means: **arrogant, proud**. In other words, in our pride and arrogance we commit sins because it is our fallen nature. It was pride that also caused Satan to rebel against God, (Ezek 28:17) The word 'TRANSGRESSION' is H6588, *pasha'* (peh'-shah), which is defined: a **moral revolt or rebellion, sin,**



## Christ the Redeemer

**transgression, trespass.** The root word is *pasha'*, which means: **to break away from just authority.** This is what Adam and Eve did in Eden when they transgressed the command of God by eating the forbidden fruit of the tree of knowledge.

They broke away from the morality of their creator and fell into eternal condemnation of the devil, (1 Tim 3:6). Here we see the universal law of *cause and effect* at work. The GREAT TRANSGRESSION is the *cause*, and the *effect* are the PRESUMPTUOUS SINS. We will find this offense caused a LOVE CHANGE within the heart of man. Notice how these sins HAVE DOMINION over the 'servant' of God. Jesus spoke about this very thing:

**"Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
WHOSOEVER COMMITTETH SIN IS THE SERVANT OF SIN."**

**"And the servant abideth not in the house for ever:  
but the Son abideth ever."**

**"IF THE SON THEREFORE SHALL MAKE YOU FREE,  
YE SHALL BE FREE INDEED."  
(John 8:34-36)**

The Hebrew for the word 'DOMINION' in the previous verse is *mashal* (maw-shal'), which means: **to rule, to have power over.** And a 'SERVANT' is one who is in subjection to a ruling POWER. The moral predicament of mankind is subject to their own contrary spirit but also to higher powers and principalities in the heavens, (Eph 6:12).

The redemption payment and purchase through Christ is offered to free us from that bondage. The word 'FREE' is G1659, *eleutheroo* (el-yoo-ther-o'-o), which means: **to liberate, to exempt from moral or mortal liability, deliver, make free.** The root word means: **unrestrained, i.e. to go at pleasure as a citizen not a slave (whether freeborn or manumitted), to exempt from obligation or liability, freeman.** It is the same as 'saved' or salvation. There is a difference between a 'servant' of God vs. a child or 'son' of God, (Gal 4:7).

**"HEREIN IS [AGAPE] LOVE, NOT THAT WE [AGAPAO] LOVED GOD,  
BUT THAT HE [AGAPAO] LOVED US, AND SENT HIS SON  
TO BE THE PROPITIATION FOR OUR SINS."  
(1 John 4:10)**

This is the companion verse to John 3:16. Again, the term "FOR US" is well qualified as Christ being the substitute for the atoning SACRIFICE, and NOT a substitute for the SINNER. We saw where "PROPIIATION" is defined: **an expiator.** To 'expiate' means: **to compensate for a wrong.** The wrong is that WE do not *agape* love God.

## **PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

Mankind does not have this divine love type spirit of God within him (called *agape/agapao* in the Greek), we lost it at the FALL which caused us to be an offense to God and His laws. IT IS THE GREAT TRANSGRESSION. The payment for this offense is a second death except we are spiritually BORN AGAIN with the divine *agape* spirit of God. This is the root issue between man and God. **It is the whole of the law.**

*"Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee,  
**EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN OF WATER AND OF THE SPIRIT,**  
**HE CANNOT ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD."***  
(John 3:5)

*"AND HOPE MAKETH NOT ASHAMED;  
**BECAUSE THE [AGAPE] LOVE OF GOD**  
**IS SHED ABROAD IN OUR HEARTS**  
**BY THE HOLY GHOST WHICH IS GIVEN UNTO US."***  
(Romans 5:5)

There are NO alternatives to being made free from the bondage of sin and eternal death; no other way TO ENTER into the kingdom of God. Forgiveness of sins IS NOT spiritual rebirth. A person MUST be BORN AGAIN, born from above with the *agape* love spirit of God. This rebirth is of the heart in the spirit, not the will of the flesh. Notice how scripture relates HOPE to the divine bestowment of *agape*.

*"AND THE LORD THY GOD WILL  
**CIRCUMCISE THINE HEART,**  
**AND THE HEART OF THY SEED,**  
**TO LOVE THE LORD THY GOD WITH ALL THINE HEART,**  
**AND WITH ALL THY SOUL, THAT THOU MAYEST LIVE."***  
(Deuteronomy 30:6)

Hebrew for 'CIRCUMCISE' is Strong's no. H4135, *muwl* (mool), and in this context it figuratively means: **cut down in pieces, to destroy**. Notice who performs this circumcision and for what purpose. This is a supernatural and experiential act of God to DESTROY the dead fallen spirit within us so that we can receive a NEW HEART and a NEW SPIRIT WITHIN. To DIE to the kingdom darkness and be reborn into the kingdom of God. This promise is the first mention of the NEW COVENANT found in Jeremiah 31:31, Ezekial 18:31 and 36:26.

*"FOR **ALL THE LAW IS FULFILLED IN ONE WORD,**  
**EVEN IN THIS;**  
**THOU SHALT [AGAPAO] LOVE THY NEIGHBOUR AS THYSELF."***  
(Galatians 5:14)

## Christ the Redeemer

The New Testament is a new covenant of a NEW HEART that *agape* loves God and our fellow man. This is not 'learning' how to release the love that is within us because we are not born with it, nor can we learn it. It must be supernaturally bestowed by God at the revelation of Jesus Christ to the OBEDIENT searching believer. Since the *agape/agapao* love of God fulfills all the law of God and is the ONLY thing that fulfills it, then without it we are guilty and subject to the law.

Jesus was born in this spiritual image of God, (2 Cor 4:4), this is how He fulfilled the law. It is by His shed blood we have access (reconciliation and justification) to God the Father **IF** we have reconciled ourselves to the one who bought us—Jesus Christ. In order for us to do that we must learn and understand what He said to do to FIND the *agape* love LIFE that is IN Him and the Father, then DO IT.

**"BUT THOSE THINGS WHICH PROCEED OUT OF THE MOUTH  
COME FORTH FROM THE HEART;  
AND THEY DEFILE THE MAN."  
(Matthew 15:18)**

**"THE HEART IS DECEITFUL ABOVE ALL THINGS,  
AND DESPERATELY WICKED:  
WHO CAN KNOW IT?"  
(Jeremiah 17:9)**

The truth is WE can not fully know our own heart, but God does and tells us here what it is. Above all our heart is DECEITFUL; meaning: **swelling up; fraudulent, crooked, deceitful, polluted**. Then God says it is "desperately wicked" which is H605, '*anash* (aw-nash'), meaning: **to be frail, feeble, incurable, sick, woeful**.

Since it is SICK and INCURABLE, then no amount of self will power can make us acceptable to God and His standard which is *agape*. This is why God must operate on us and 'circumcise' our heart. To cut out and EXPOSE to us what we really are which justifies our judgment to eternal ruin. Compare Matthew 15:18 to what we read in Psalm 19:14. Notice how the mouth reveals the condition of our heart, the center most essence of our spirit, (Rom 2:29, 1 Pet 3:4).

**"FOR FROM WITHIN, OUT OF THE HEART OF MEN, PROCEED  
EVIL THOUGHTS, ADULTERIES, FORNICATIONS, MURDERS,"**

**"THEFTS, COVETOUSNESS, WICKEDNESS, DECEIT, LASCIVIOUSNESS, AN EVIL EYE,  
BLASPHEMY, PRIDE, FOOLISHNESS:"**

**"ALL THESE EVIL THINGS COME FROM WITHIN,  
AND DEFILE THE MAN."  
(Mark 7:21-23)**

We see here the two facets of Psalm 19:13, the PRESUMPTUOUS SINS proceeding forth from a sick and deceitful heart caused by THE GREAT TRANSGRESSION.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Jesus came to offer a CHANGED HEART. John the Baptist said "***now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees***", where 'trees' refers to men and 'root' is the HEART of the spirit. The root of a tree is firmly anchored into the earth of the WORLD, (Eccl 3:11). Again, this is the core issue between God and mankind. The root of the word 'DEFILED' in these verses mean: **UNHOLY**.

**"BECAUSE IT IS WRITTEN, BE YE HOLY; FOR I AM HOLY."**  
(1 Peter 1:16)

**"BE YE THEREFORE PERFECT,**  
**EVEN AS YOUR FATHER WHICH IS IN HEAVEN IS PERFECT."**  
(Matthew 5:48)

**"AND TO KNOW THE [AGAPE] LOVE OF CHRIST,**  
**WHICH PASSETH KNOWLEDGE, THAT YE MIGHT BE FILLED**  
**WITH ALL THE FULNESS OF GOD."**  
(Ephesians 3:19)

How can we be HOLY and PERFECT as God? The word 'FULNESS' is G4138, *pleroma* (play'-ro-mah), which is defined in the Strong's Greek lexicon: **repletion or completion**. And the word 'PERFECT' is G5046 *teleios* (tel'-i-os), which also means: **complete**. Many Christians make it a big deal to say they are not 'perfect', not realizing that Jesus commanded them to be PERFECT as the Father is perfect. This comes from ignorance to what that word in Scripture means in view of true salvation. First John clarifies this for us:

**"And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us.**  
**GOD IS [AGAPE] LOVE;**  
**and he that dwelleth in [agape] love dwelleth in God, and God in him."**

**"HEREIN IS OUR LOVE MADE PERFECT,**  
**THAT WE MAY HAVE BOLDNESS IN THE DAY OF JUDGMENT:**  
**BECAUSE AS HE IS, SO ARE WE IN THIS WORLD."**

**"There is no fear in love; but PERFECT LOVE casteth out fear:**  
**because fear hath torment.**  
**HE THAT FEARETH IS NOT MADE PERFECT IN LOVE."**  
(1 John 4:16-18)

Do you see? Jesus said God the Father is a Spirit, (John 4:24), the Spirit of pure *agape* love. Spiritual regeneration is to place the divine love Spirit of God within the TRUE born again Christian thereby making our love complete, PERFECT. Hebrews 2:15 says that we have to be **delivered** from the FEAR OF DEATH. People instinctively fear death. Why? Could it be what we really fear is the eternal judgment of God?

## Christ the Redeemer

Because IF we have IN TRUTH been born again with the *agape* love life that is IN Christ Jesus, then this is saying when we face JUDGMENT we shall have BOLDNESS to stand before Him because we shall be as He is. Isn't that what Jesus commanded us, that we be perfect as our Heavenly Father is perfect?

**"ARE YE SO FOOLISH? HAVING BEGUN IN THE SPIRIT,  
ARE YE NOW MADE PERFECT BY THE FLESH?"**  
(Galatians 3:3)

Now we are back to the contrast of the spirit vs. the flesh. This verse is a testimony that true spiritual rebirth IS NOT accomplished instantly by a "sinner's prayer". The word 'FLESH' is G4561 *sarx*, and in this context means: **the body (as opposed to the soul or spirit), as the symbol of what is external, implies human nature with its frailties and passions, carnal minded.** This is why a person can not 'get' to heaven by works of the law. Christ commanded that in order for a person to FIND LIFE, (born again with the *agape* Spirit of God), they must obey Him and enter the STRAIT GATE and the WAY to LIFE which is 'NARROW'. A way full of tribulation and anguish of the soul. He said we MUST pick up OUR OWN CROSS and follow Him into DEATH. By obedience to Christ's commands, God Himself through His Holy Spirit of Truth will chastise and correct us and bring us down into spiritual death and judgment. THEN at the manifestation of Jesus Christ to the believer, will He raise us up to be in the likeness of His resurrection. This is all BEGUN and FINISHED in the SPIRIT, not the flesh mind of the outer man. The world knows that the answer to all its problems is LOVE. IF mankind could only "learn to release it". But that is not possible because mankind can not release that which he does not possess.

**"FOR THE LAW HAVING A SHADOW OF GOOD THINGS TO COME,  
AND NOT THE VERY IMAGE OF THE THINGS,  
CAN NEVER WITH THOSE SACRIFICES  
WHICH THEY OFFERED YEAR BY YEAR CONTINUALLY  
MAKE THE COMERS THEREUNTO PERFECT."**

**"FOR THEN WOULD THEY NOT HAVE CEASED TO BE OFFERED?  
BECAUSE THAT THE WORSHIPPERS ONCE PURGED  
SHOULD HAVE HAD NO MORE CONSCIENCE OF SINS."**

**"BUT IN THOSE SACRIFICES THERE IS A REMEMBRANCE  
AGAIN MADE OF SINS EVERY YEAR."**

**"FOR IT IS NOT POSSIBLE  
THAT THE BLOOD OF BULLS AND OF GOATS SHOULD  
TAKE AWAY SINS."**  
(Hebrews 10:1-4)

## **PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

Read that carefully and consider what it says in view of what we have seen. Do you see the difference here between the SINS we commit year by year vs. what MADE PERFECT means? For if the shed blood of the sacrifice made the sinner PERFECT, then they would no longer be obligated to offer blood sacrifices again. Why? Because they would no longer have a "**conscience of sins**". Strong's for 'CONSCIENCE' here is G4893, *suneidesis* (soon-i'-day-sis), which is: **moral consciousness**. The root word means: **to see completely; to understand or become aware**. Regeneration of our spirit REMOVES the awareness of the desires of our flesh that transgresses the laws of God. We undergo a CHANGE from MORALITY (the knowledge of good and evil) TO the *agape* knowledge of God.

The phrase "TAKE AWAY" is G851, *aphaireo* (af-ahee-reh'-o), which means: **to remove, cut off**. It comes from G575 and G138 which basically means: **to stop the preference or choice**. Therefore according to this, ***the blood sacrifice pays the penalty for sins, and being made perfect (regenerated, born again) removes the awareness to commit those sins.*** We are to spiritually return to Genesis, which is what the literal meaning of 'regeneration' means. This is why we cannot be spiritually born again through atonement only. Our "conscience of sins" must be removed in order to put on the "mind of Christ", (1 Cor 2:16).

**AND HE IS THE PROPITIATION FOR OUR SINS:  
AND NOT FOR OURS ONLY,  
BUT ALSO FOR THE SINS OF THE WHOLE WORLD.**  
(1 John 2:2)

This verse is another confirmation that ATONEMENT for sins does not cause one to be BORN AGAIN. Remember 'propitiation' means: **an atoning victim who atones for sin**. Therefore the atonement of Christ covers the sins of the flesh for the whole world. And since this also includes all who shall live in the future, would that not also include all who have lived in the past?

If we are 'SAVED' only from Christ's act of propitiation, then that means everyone in the world is SAVED does it not? But we know that many die in their sins because as Peter said, they have DENIED themselves the Lord that bought them. So Jesus was and is the Savior of the world, (1 John 4:14), but only CONDITIONALLY. Now read this next verse carefully.

**"REPENT YE THEREFORE, AND BE CONVERTED,  
THAT YOUR SINS MAY BE BLOTTED OUT,  
WHEN  
THE TIMES OF REFRESHING SHALL COME  
FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD;"**  
**"AND HE SHALL SEND JESUS CHRIST,  
WHICH BEFORE WAS PREACHED UNTO YOU:"**  
(Acts 3:19-20)

## Christ the Redeemer

Do a word study on this verse and consider how literal this must be. The phrase "BLOTTED OUT" means your sins are **pardoned**. The word 'PRESENCE' means the **appearance or manifestation** of the Lord Jesus Christ. This is not a reference to the second advent. He shall (at the appointed time) be sent by God to the OBEDIENT SEARCHING BELIEVER. WHEN does this say the forgiveness of sins happens? The word 'TIMES' is G2540, *kairos* (kahee-ros'), in this context means: **a set or proper time**. And 'REFRESHING' is G403, *anapsuxis* (an-aps'-ook-sis): figuratively means: **a revival**.

The Random House dictionary defines 'REVIVAL' as: **restoration of life, consciousness; a religious awakening: [and in Law it means] the reestablishment of legal force and effect**. Do you understand what this all means?

*True salvation according to the doctrine of redemption of the Holy Bible is the experiential spiritual death and revival that is brought to those who have obeyed Christ's command of picking up our cross and following Him in the process of regeneration, (Mat 19:28). The revival of the life of God within us ONLY comes at the revelation of Christ to the awaiting believer. Once the mystery of God has been acknowledge by that believer, THEN is when the blotting out of sins take effect for that person, not before.*

The forgiveness of sins does not come when the Holy Spirit comes upon a person, because He is not the propitiation for our sins. He is to guide us in the WAY, **IF** He is allowed to. Only Christ paid the price of redemption and has legal right to be "LORD" over mankind. Despite Roman-Catholic doctrine, this is why 'Mother' Mary also cannot be **co-redeemer** with Christ. Modern Christianity denies all of this and says there is NO literal manifestation, and NO REVELATION OTHER THAN THE BIBLE. Perhaps these qualify as FALSE PROPHETS who NEVER OBEYED the commands of Christ to enter the strait gate, or take-up their cross to FIND the living Christ. Jesus has NEVER manifested Himself to them, and Like the 'MANY' of Matthew 7, Jesus will be forced to say to them: He NEVER knew them.

***"And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast REDEEMED US TO GOD BY THY BLOOD out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;"***  
(Revelation 5:9)

***"MUCH MORE THEN, BEING NOW JUSTIFIED BY HIS BLOOD, WE SHALL BE SAVED FROM WRATH THROUGH HIM."***  
(Romans 5:9)

Notice the harmony between Romans and Revelation, (verse 9 of the 5<sup>th</sup> chapter in both references). Again, 'atonement' is a **PAYMENT for sin** and to 'redeem' is the **PURCHASE of rights**.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Even though they are two entirely different aspects of His redemptive work, **the blood of Christ is applied to both and both are fulfilled at the spiritual rebirth of the searching believer.** To say that Christ died and shed His blood INSTEAD OF us, does not make Scriptural or logical sense. Effectively all people physically die, saved or unsaved. Therefore, **it cannot apply to physical death.** So that leaves "spiritual death" and eternal punishment. The problem with that is, the Bible claims ALL ARE BORN IN SPIRITUAL DEATH AND UNDER CONDEMNATION, (John 3:18), except we REPENT, (Luke 13:3,5; Rev 2:5). Since we are born in spiritual DEATH, and subject to physical death, how is it that Jesus died INSTEAD OF US? For the only option open to man (in this life), is to lay hold of ETERNAL LIFE. Otherwise he remains in eternal spiritual death. We are now going to conclude the scriptural application of "FOR US" as it applies to *atonement* and *substitution*.

***For he hath made him to be sin FOR US, who knew no sin; that we MIGHT BE MADE THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD IN HIM.***  
(2 Corinthians 5:21)

Christ did die FOR our sins. So **IF** we are in true spiritual union with Christ, only then we have forgiveness of sins. This is entirely **CONDITIONAL**. The **CONDITION** is that we are IN TRUTH **IN** Christ, covered by His robe of righteousness (*agape*) so the shame of our nakedness does not appear. If we are **NOT IN** Christ, then we REMAIN IN OUR SINS and under the law, (Gal 5:18). Christ fulfilled the law, but He did not DESTROY IT.

We saw where Christ died for ALL MEN, which some interpret as "universal salvation" of all people whether they 'accept' Christ or not. Regardless, the atonement has already been paid and is **made available FOR ALL**, but the covering of His blood is ONLY through **spiritual union** with the Lord that BOUGHT all of US. FAITH in the blood Christ shed 2000 years ago, IS NOT a SUBSTITUTE for SPIRITUAL UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST of today. The majority of Christians who claim they have forgiveness of sins by FAITH ONLY in the blood of Christ claim falsely. Jesus called them thieves and robbers because they enter IN some other WAY and attempt to steal away the glory and blessings of the TRUE children of God.

***"There is therefore now NO CONDEMNATION TO THEM WHICH ARE IN CHRIST JESUS, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit."***

***"FOR THE LAW OF THE SPIRIT OF LIFE IN CHRIST JESUS HATH MADE ME FREE FROM THE LAW OF SIN AND DEATH."***  
(Romans 8:1-2)



## Christ the Redeemer

The word "CONDEMNATION" here means: **to be condemned, a verdict of guilty, or judged and sentenced unto eternal damnation.** It would be just as true to say everyone who ARE NOT IN Christ Jesus, ARE condemned to eternal judgment. So the entire question revolves around "IF" we are truly "IN" Christ which fulfills the NEW LAW of the Spirit of Life IN Christ, which is the NEW COVENANT. To know experientially what "IN CHRIST" really means.

Christ dying for the forgiveness of sins has NOTHING to do with whether a Christian is IN Christ or not. Since the new law is the Spirit of LIFE is IN Christ, (Jn 13:34), and that LIFE is at the END of the NARROW WAY, (Mat 7:14-15), then we are going to have to RECKON with our REDEEMER, strive to enter the strait gate and undergo the narrow way to find it. He told us that we cannot FIND LIFE except we SEARCH for it with all our heart, strength, and soul. The washing by the blood of Christ and forgiveness of sins comes AT THE ENTERING into the LIFE of Christ, not before. Therefore forgiveness of sins also is at the END of the narrow way. Being BORN AGAIN **IS** spiritual union and LIFE in Christ and only then do we have forgiveness, justification, immortality, eternal life.

Christ's narrow way IS NOT simple belief via a "sinners prayer", and have just a convenient 'relationship' with Him. That is the LIE of false teachers.

***"I said therefore unto you, that ye shall***  
***DIE IN YOUR SINS:***  
***for IF ye believe not that I am he,***  
***YE SHALL DIE IN YOUR SINS***  
***(John 8:24)***

This verse PROVES that it is **ALL CONDITIONAL**, even the BLOOD atonement. That all who are not "IN" Christ are UNDER the law. The atonement work of Christ or our sins is **conditional** upon the **regenerative belief** that comes from an experiential encounter with Him, when He brings GRACE at the revelation of Him. We must "drink" His blood, (John 6:54). The application of "BELIEVE" in this verse is the type of belief that comes from an ABSOLUTE knowing, (John 17:3). It is not simply a mental 'acceptance' that Jesus is Son of God but belief from "thine heart", a regenerative belief of the spirit. Again, the CONDITION is actually acquiring **authentic** spiritual UNION by obeying Christ's commands on how to obtain it. We must RECKON with our REDEEMER ON HIS TERMS. Despite the influence of MASONIC doctrine **there are not many pathways to God**, there is only ONE WAY and our Lord said it was NARROW.

***Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, THAT THROUGH THIS***  
***MAN [JESUS] is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins:***  
***AND BY HIM ALL THAT BELIEVE ARE JUSTIFIED from all things,***  
***from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.***  
***(Acts 13:38-39)***

## **PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

1. Forgiveness of sins is THROUGH Christ, just as atonement was THROUGH a sacrificial lamb;
2. To "believe" is qualified by Christ as those who believe unto salvation, (Heb 10:39);
3. Believer's sins are only forgiven when true salvation occurs, (Acts 3:19-20).

***"But of him are ye IN Christ Jesus,  
who of God is made unto us wisdom,  
and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:"***  
(1 Corinthians 1:30)

***"Much more then, being now JUSTIFIED BY HIS BLOOD,  
we shall be saved from wrath THROUGH him."***

***"For if, when we were enemies,  
WE WERE RECONCILED TO GOD BY THE DEATH OF HIS SON,  
much more, being reconciled, we SHALL BE SAVED BY HIS LIFE."***  
(Romans 5:9-10)

***NOTICE THAT EVERY PROMISE IS IN and THROUGH CHRIST ONLY. THAT IS WHY ALL THE WORLD'S RELIGIONS ARE VANITY AND IDOLATRY. SALVATION IS NOT GIVEN ANY OTHER WAY. THERE IS NO CO-REDEEMER, BECAUSE IT WAS CHRIST ONLY WHO REDEEMED. JESUS CHRIST IS THE ONLY ONE WHO FULFILLED THE LAW AND SHED THE BLOOD REQUIRED FOR REDEMPTION.***

Justification by His blood is only THROUGH Him. **The law was fulfilled IN Christ, that we may fulfill the law THROUGH Christ.** That is why without Him, we are nothing, and can do nothing, (John 15:5).

***"But IF  
WE WALK IN THE LIGHT,  
AS HE IS IN THE LIGHT,  
we have fellowship one with another,***

***AND  
THE BLOOD OF JESUS CHRIST HIS SON  
CLEANSETH US FROM ALL SIN."***  
(1 John 1:7)

Again we find the big conditional '**IF**'. By doing a word study on 'LIGHT', we find that it represents the revelation of God's divine 'AGAPE' LOVE. It is the EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF GOD. Notice that the cleansing by the blood is also covered under the same conditional "IF".

We are cleansed of our sins '**IF**' we walk in the LIGHT as He is in the LIGHT. Now compare this to a verse that we have already seen for confirmation of what this 'LIGHT' represents:

## Christ the Redeemer

**"AND WALK IN [AGAPE] LOVE,  
AS CHRIST ALSO HATH [AGAPE] LOVED US,  
AND HATH GIVEN HIMSELF FOR US  
AN OFFERING AND A SACRIFICE TO GOD  
for a sweetsmelling savour."  
*(Ephesians 5:2)***

These are essentially the same statements, they confirm and define each other. Notice the application of "FOR US", and the parallel that identifies what "LIGHT" is:

**WALK IN LIGHT = WALK IN "AGAPE" LOVE.**

God is LIGHT (1 John 1:5); Christ is LIGHT (John 8:12); God is "AGAPE" love (1 John 4:8,16); and Christ is "AGAPE" love (Eph 3:19). The only way one can "WALK" in the divine love of God is to have it BESTOWED upon them (1 John 3:1). For it is the LIGHT [revelation] of LIFE (John 8:12) and this LIFE is found only IN the Son (1 John 5:12).

This LIFE is well HIDDEN (Col 2:2-3) from man and can only be found at the end of the NARROW WAY (Mat 7:14) which is through the CROSS (Mat 10:39). The HIDDEN wisdom, the MYSTERY of God IN Christ and Christ in us. There is COMPLETE harmony of scripture here and how true salvation is only through the LIGHT of God's *agape* LOVE.

***Even THE MYSTERY which hath BEEN HID  
from ages and from generations, but now is  
made MANIFEST TO HIS SAINTS:  
[NO ONE ELSE]***

***To whom God would make known what is the riches  
of the glory of THIS MYSTERY among the Gentiles;  
WHICH IS CHRIST IN YOU,  
the hope of glory: (Colossians 1:26-27)***

**NO TRUE UNION WITH CHRIST = NO SALVATION AND FORGIVENESS OF SINS**

## 6. SUBSTITUTE TEACHERS.

This section reveals what is really happening in the modern version of the doctrine of *Substitution*, whereby a LIE has been **substituted** for THE TRUTH. The false teachings consistently **substitute** "INSTEAD OF US" in the place of "FOR US".

The sinner is being **substituted** in place of the sacrifice FOR the sin. Because of this, it **substitutes** a DEAD FAITH instead of an active faith which is **obedient unto death**, (James 2:17-20).

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

It **substitutes** its own righteousness **in the stead** of the righteousness of Christ, (Phil 3:8-9; Ezek 33:13). It has **substituted** "another gospel" of Christ **in lieu of** the true one, (Gal 1:6-9). It speaks evil of the real WAY of truth, (2 Pet 2:1-2). Since there is only one WAY to be IN TRUTH "born again", (John 10:1), then there also is a 'way' that SEEMS RIGHT to the MANY Christians, but it leads unto destruction, (Prov 14:12, 16:25). Jesus called it "some other way", a broad way *theology* that leads to eternal damnation.

---

**REDEEM**, 10. In *theology*, to rescue and deliver from the bondage of sin and the penalties of God's violated law, **by obedience and suffering in the place of the sinner, or by doing and suffering that which is accepted in lieu of the sinner's obedience.** Gal. iii. Tit. ii.

[From: *American Dictionary of the English Language*, by Noah Webster 1828]

---

From what we have already seen, this definition of "redeem" found in Webster's original 1828 dictionary clearly reveals **the core of the LIE**. First, it presents that Christ obeyed and suffered IN THE PLACE OF the SINNER, not in place of the SACRIFICE. Again, that means Christ intervened for the sinner's SELF ATONEMENT, which stands against both the Old and New Testaments. Next, SUBSTITUTION is ACCEPTED INSTEAD OF THE SINNER'S OBEDIENCE?

WHERE DID THAT COME FROM? HOW UTTER ARROGANT AND DEFIANT! We will prove without doubt that Webster's 'official' definition of "redeem" is a...

### "DAMNABLE HERESY"

that is "**privily**" brought in, just as Peter warned would happen. **When did Christ ever say we no longer have to obey Him?** On the contrary, Jesus said that salvation comes by obedience:

**"AND BEING MADE PERFECT, HE BECAME THE AUTHOR OF ETERNAL SALVATION UNTO ALL THEM**

**THAT OBEY HIM;**

**(Hebrews 5:9)**

**WEBSTER'S MIND SET IS TYPICAL OF THE PERVERSION OF GRACE THAT JUDE ALSO WARNED OF. THIS MODERN PERVERSION OF GRACE OMITTS ANY OBEDIENCE IN RELATION TO SALVATION ON THE BASIS OF THEIR FAULTY DOCTRINE AND INSTEAD CLAIMS OBEDIENCE TO CHRIST'S COMMANDS IS A "WORK" OR "LEGALISM".**

If you compare 2 Peter 2 and Jude 1 side by side, you will find they are identical in context. They warn of false Christianity that becomes established within the latter-day CHURCH, and there is NO implication these lies are ever detected by the Christian majority before Christ returns. Now let's review the two verses given by Webster to support Webster's faulty definition.

## Christ the Redeemer

*"Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law  
**BEING MADE A CURSE FOR US:**  
for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:  
That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles  
**THROUGH** Jesus Christ;  
that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith."  
(Galations 3:13-14)*

*"Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God  
and our Saviour Jesus Christ;  
**WHO GAVE HIMSELF FOR US,**  
**THAT HE MIGHT REDEEM US FROM ALL INIQUITY,**  
and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works."  
(Titus 2:13-14)*

This verse in Titus also must be further qualified:

***"BEING JUSTIFIED FREELY BY HIS GRACE  
THROUGH THE REDEMPTION  
THAT IS IN CHRIST JESUS:"**  
(Romans 3:24)*

Notice that in both of these references is the **CONDITIONAL** qualifiers: "**THROUGH** Jesus Christ" and "**IN** Christ". The justification of the Grace of God is **ONLY** through **TRUE** SPIRITUAL UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST, **NOT FAITH IN CHRIST**. The term "FOR US" is again interpreted by Webster as "IN THE PLACE OF" and "INSTEAD OF", (which is what 'lieu' means). Where is it in these or ANY other verses of scripture does it even imply that OBEDIENCE of believers is NO LONGER REQUIRED? This is nothing more than a reversal of Scripture, (2 Pet 3:15-16).

The point of all of this is **the result** that comes from a unregenerate spirit and false doctrine. The modern version teaches that believers do not have to BE OBEDIENT or spiritually DIE upon a spiritual cross. **This is damnable heresy because it guarantees eternal judgment for everyone who accepts this lie. Jesus, Paul, Peter and Jude forewarned that the MAJORITY of Christians WILL FOLLOW Christian teachers who 'propagate' false salvation doctrine.**

First, we will investigate the claim that Christians do not have to be obedient, that the commands of the Lord are not literal or that they do not apply to the Church.

*"Then **Peter and the other apostles answered** and said,  
**WE [CHRISTIANS]**  
**OUGHT TO OBEY GOD RATHER THAN MEN.**"  
(Acts 5:29)*

*"And **WE** are his witnesses of these things; and so is also*

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

### *the Holy Ghost, WHOM GOD HATH GIVEN TO THEM* **THAT OBEY HIM.**"

(Acts 5:32)

The word "OBEY" in both of these verses is *peitharchoo*, which is: **to be persuaded by a ruler, to submit to authority, to conform to advice, to hearken to, to obey.** Peter REPRESENTS THE CHURCH, Jesus said so himself, (Mat 16:18). The book of Acts concerns itself with the establishment of the CHURCH. WE (the Church) are being told by those of whom the foundation of the Church was established to OBEY GOD and OBEY the HOLY SPIRIT, RATHER THAN MEN.

So as it states in Hebrews 5:9, Jesus is our author of salvation **ONLY IF we OBEY HIM.** The Greek for "OBEY" here is *hupakouo*, which means: **to hear as a subordinate, to listen attentively; to heed or conform to a command or authority, to hearken to, be obedient to.** If we DO NOT HEAR [UNDERSTAND] AND OBEY the commands of Jesus Christ, then obviously we do not accept Jesus as the author of eternal salvation, NOR IN REALITY DO WE 'BELIEVE' IN HIM. The condition is implied here. It is interesting to note that the root word for 'author' is the same as the word 'ask' of Matthew 7:7, which means: **to beg, call for, crave, desire, to require.**

*"Ye are my friends,*

**IF YE DO**  
**WHATSOEVER I COMMAND YOU.**"

(John 15:14)

*"Jesus answered and said unto him, **IF** A MAN LOVE ME, HE WILL **KEEP MY WORDS:** and my Father will love him, AND WE WILL COME UNTO HIM, AND **MAKE OUR ABODE WITH HIM.**"*

(John 14:23)

There is no denying that salvation is totally CONDITIONAL. The word "IF" is *ean*, which is: **a conditional particle.** The word "DO" of course means: **to fulfill, to execute,** which is to OBEY. The root means: **to perform repeatedly.** This testifies to what Jesus said IS LITERAL. He does not leave room here for doctrinal interpretations of men. **IF** you **DO NOT DO** as Jesus commands, then you are **NOT** His friend but His ENEMY. **IF** you **do not KEEP** His words, you **DO NOT LOVE** Christ and He and the Father **WILL NOT** make their ABODE with you, and you will die IN YOUR SINS and be sent into ETERNAL RUIN along with the 'MANY'.

***"Go ye therefore, and TEACH ALL NATIONS, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:"***

**"TEACHING THEM**  
**TO OBSERVE [OBEY] ALL THINGS**

**WHATSOEVER I HAVE COMMANDED YOU:**

***and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen." (Matthew 28:19-20)***

The word "observe" is the same Greek word as "keep" which is to **OBEY**. This passage of scripture is regarded as the "GREAT COMMISSION" of Jesus Christ to the CHURCH. This is the COMMAND by which the Church is to spread the gospel of Jesus Christ to all the world. And what did Jesus specifically command to TEACH? **TO OBEY ALL THINGS WHATSOEVER THAT HE COMMANDED.** What did Jesus command?

***"ENTER YE IN AT THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE"; "TAKE UP YOUR CROSS, FOLLOW ME"; "LOSE YOUR LIFE THAT YOU MAY SAVE IT"; REPENT A GODLY REPENTANCE.***

Is the "GREAT COMMISSION" of Christ being OBEYED by modern Christianity? **NO**, only in part. When Christ returns to earth, will He find an unfeigned faith on Earth? Perhaps only FEW. Why? Because true Biblical faith is based upon OBEDIENCE to the will of God the Father and the commands of the Lord Jesus Christ.

The false Christian teachers have SUBSTITUTED a disobedient and dead faith instead of an obedient and tried faith. A faith that has the WORK of obedience to Christ's commands. Here are several other New Testament references that clearly show that OBEDIENCE IS REQUIRED, especially for SALVATION.

Mat 7:21,24; 12:50; 19:17	2 Th 1:8; 3:14
Luke 6:46-48; 8:21; 11:28; 17:10	Phile 1:21
John 6:40; 8:51; 14:15, 21, 24; 15:10	Heb 5:8-9; 13:17
Acts 5:29, 32	1 Pet 4:17
Rom 1:5; 2:8; 6:16; 10:16; 13:1	1 John 2:3-5; 5:3
Gal 3:1; 5:7	Rev 22:7, 14

The only way to MISINTERPRET all of the many references for OBEDIENCE is to be in rank DISOBEDIENCE which is counted as DISBELIEF. God does not change, (Mal 3:6), and there are many verses also in the Old Testament that also prove God always requires OBEDIENCE. The Patriarchs before the law came through Moses were considered righteous by God through OBEDIENT FAITH. Therefore, it is established that OBEDIENCE to God and the commands of the Lord Jesus Christ is **absolute**. New Testament obedience to the commands of Christ leads to the bestowment of God's *agape* love bestowment. A person "MUST" be born again.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

And obedience to Christ's commands is for ALL of Israel which INCLUDES THE CHURCH. His command to REPENT went out to the CHURCHES in Revelation which specifically applies to the latter day BODY OF CHRIST.

Another common EXCUSE given by false Christians and their teachers is that the sayings of Jesus are NOT LITERAL. And so they spiritualize away scripture and make the words of Christ of none effect, just as the Pharisees did in Jesus' time, (Mark 7:13). The interesting thing is that Jesus actually warned of this.

**"AND WHY CALL YE ME, LORD, LORD,  
AND DO NOT THE THINGS  
WHICH I SAY?"**  
(Luke 6:46)

This verse is from the discourse known as the 'Beatitudes', where Jesus was specifically teaching HIS DISCIPLES, (vs. 20). The Beatitudes parallel *the sermon on the mount* of Matthew chapters 5, 6, and 7. Disciples in the New Testament are defined as CHRISTIANS, (Acts 11:26). And "...no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost", (1 Cor 12:3).

Therefore the only people who call Jesus 'Lord' are CHRISTIANS. These Christian disciples were among the MANY who stand in rank disobedience to the things Christ told us TO DO. They will stand among the MANY of Matthew 7 at judgment, to be sent away to the eternal FIRES by Christ Himself. Since they refused Christ's sayings, then they are **not saved**, they never entered into true spiritual UNION with Christ because they never OBEYED His command to enter the strait gate and narrow way which leads to LIFE. Therefore, Jesus will be forced to say:

**"...I NEVER KNEW YOU: DEPART FROM ME,  
YE THAT WORK INIQUITY."**

**"THEREFORE  
WHOSOEVER HEARETH THESE SAYINGS OF MINE,  
AND DOETH THEM,**

**I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:"** (Matthew 7:23-24)

The word "INIQUITY" is *anomia*, which means: **illegality, violation of law, transgression of the law, or unrighteousness**. The righteousness of Christ is proven by scripture to be the divine "AGAPE" love of God. And it is the "AGAPE" love of God that ONLY fulfills God's LAW, (Rom 13:10). The MANY Christians transgressed the law because they failed to enter into true union with Christ to be covered by His blood and His robe of righteousness which is God's "AGAPE" love.



## Christ the Redeemer

They obviously BELIEVED they were SAVED because they argued with Christ over their WORKS of FAITH. Jesus does not even question their works, their SINS or even their FAITH. **THESE THINGS ARE NOT THE ISSUE.** He has already sacrificed Himself for the sins of man. Paul said we can have ALL spiritual gifts and ALL faith, and still be NOTHING. ***The only reason Christ rejects the MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS, is for the ONE issue they never considered:***

**HE NEVER KNEW THEM.** Not at any time in their lives or Christian walk did Christ "know" (enter into union with) them, otherwise He could not have made that comment. Every single Christian needs to give that a lot of serious thought. The **ONLY WAY** that could happen is **DECEPTION** through a FALSE SALVATION GOSPEL on a WORLD WIDE SCALE, especially in the *United States of Babylon*. They DID NOT take the commands of Christ AS IT IS in truth the WORD of God. Instead they believed men in the 'stead' of God. Therefore, they were disobedient.

**"FOR THIS CAUSE ALSO THANK WE GOD WITHOUT CEASING,  
BECAUSE, WHEN YE RECEIVED THE WORD OF GOD  
which ye heard of us,  
YE RECEIVED IT NOT AS THE WORD OF MEN,  
BUT AS IT IS IN TRUTH, THE WORD OF GOD,  
WHICH EFFECTUALLY WORKETH ALSO IN YOU THAT BELIEVE."  
(1 Thessalonians 2:13)**

The phrase "AS IT IS IN TRUTH" means the Word of God presents itself as both **LITERAL and TRUE.** THE WORDS MEAN WHAT THEY SAY, AND SAY WHAT THEY MEAN. Verses of scripture like this are never preached. Why? Because the majority of Christians preach an adulterated gospel, THE WORD OF MEN. IF they preached God's word "AS IT IS", then perhaps the 'MANY' would have discovered their error before it was too late.

**"AND YE HAVE NOT HIS WORD ABIDING IN YOU:  
FOR WHOM HE HATH SENT, HIM YE BELIEVE NOT."**

**"SEARCH THE SCRIPTURES;  
FOR IN THEM YE THINK YE HAVE ETERNAL LIFE:  
and they are they which testify of me."**

**"AND YE WILL NOT COME TO ME,  
THAT YE MIGHT HAVE LIFE."  
(John 5:38-40)**

Carefully consider what Jesus is saying here. **Unless one has the true understanding of the Word of God abiding in them, they do not believe Christ.**

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

If one is ignorant in understanding the Word, they CANNOT believe Christ, because they have not obeyed what He said to do. Jesus said that unless one takes up their own cross and lose their life for His sake, they cannot even be His disciple, much less be born again. It is obvious these people did not know Scripture or the depth of them. Jesus is warning to **search the scriptures**. People read their Bibles in view of what the false teachers tell them to believe which is to just 'believe' they are saved. That is belief in belief! Because of disobedience to the commands of Christ, God reflects back to them according to the idols they "set-up" in their heart, (Isaiah 66:4; Jeremiah 6:19 and 17:10; Ezekial 14:1-5 and 8-9;). Believing in the promises of the Bible IS NOT SALVATION.

**IT IS COMING TO THE LIVING CHRIST, TO OBEY HIM, TO LITERALLY FIND HIM AND ENTER INTO SPIRITUAL UNION WITH HIM. IT IS THE MYSTERY OF CHRIST IN YOU. THE REVELATION OF GOD AND BESTOWMENT OF HIS DIVINE 'AGAPE' LOVE THROUGH A REAL AND LIVING CHRIST. JUST 'BELIEVING' THAT JESUS HAS COME INTO YOUR HEART AND SAVED YOU BECAUSE THE DOCTRINES OF MEN SAYS SO, IS NOT THE TESTIMONY OF TRUE SALVATION. IT IS THE TESTIMONY OF THE SPIRIT OF ERROR. ACCORDING TO JESUS, PAUL, AND PETER, FALSE CHRISTIAN PROPHETS UTTERLY REJECT THE TRUTH OF GOD'S WORD AND DISOBEY THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST FOR AUTHENTIC SALVATION.**

So far, we have proven that the modern version of the doctrine of *Substitution* is totally **REVERSED** from what the scriptures actually teach. Jesus, Peter, Paul, and Jude all warned of certain men who enter into Christianity, **PERVERTING** the 'WAY' which causes FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINES within the body of Christ. These doctrines appear to be EXACTLY correct on the surface, (Gal 1:6-7). They warned that the Christian **MAJORITY** follow these teachers who are accursed, (Gal 1:8-9). Since this scriptural truth is thoroughly verified over and over in the doctrine of *False Christianity*, is there scriptural reference to a perversion of the application of Christ's substitution doctrine?

**"For there are CERTAIN MEN CREPT IN UNAWARES, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men,**

**TURNING THE GRACE  
OF OUR GOD INTO LASCIVIOUSNESS,**

**and DENYING the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ."**

**(Jude 1:4)**

The GRACE of God is what sent Christ to this world to die FOR US, (John 3:16). It was the GRACE of God that put Christ upon His cross. It is by the GRACE of God we have a strait gate and narrow way that leads to ETERNAL LIFE. Without Christ and His sacrifice there would be no hope or mercy for man.

## Christ the Redeemer

**Therefore, the saving GRACE of God DIRECTLY RELATES TO CHRIST'S SUBSTITUTIONARY SACRIFICE.** If you change what GRACE is, the doctrine of *Substitution* must also change because the GRACE of God is the testimony of His divine *agape*.

According to Jesus in Matthew 7:15, Paul in Acts 20:28-31, Peter in 2 Peter 2:3, and Jude, those Christian teachers enter into mainstream Christianity **WITHOUT BEING DETECTED** by the Christian body. Jude says it is GRACE they pervert. The word "TURNING", is *metatithemi*, which literally means: **to turn, change by PERVERTING**. It gives the idea that the application of true GRACE is changed by "TWISTING" it around, or **REVERSING IT** from its intended purpose. Likewise, by changing the doctrine of *Substitution*, the application of Grace MUST ALSO CHANGE which we want to examine. The word "DENYING" is *arneomai*, and is a very interesting word which means: **to contradict, disavow, reject, refuse**. These men obviously **do not deny** Jesus as the Messiah, but they **CONTRADICT** Christ and God the Father.

That is exactly what 'turning' means. They PERVERT scripture by CONTRADICTING and DISAVOWING IT. They REJECT Christ's commands and REFUSE to enter the STRAIT GATE or to pick up their cross by twisting around their meanings. By contradicting scripture and the commands of the Lord Jesus Christ, they actually REJECT God and Christ and keep others from entering into the Kingdom. The Greek word for "DENYING" (*arneomai*) is the negative of (*rheo*) which means: **not to speak, say not, or not to command**. So, it is what these men **DO NOT SAY** which DISAVOWS the Lord. The word "DISAVOW" is similar in meaning. The prefix: 'DIS' is also a negative, and 'AVOW' means: **to declare frankly or openly, acknowledge, confess, admit to**. So it is what they DO NOT DECLARE that causes a perversion of Scripture. They have CONCEALED "the way" Christ gave. To 'contradict' means: **to assert the contrary or opposite of**. Therefore, the definition themselves declare they REVERSE the meaning of GRACE BY **NOT ACKNOWLEDGING THE WAY OF TRUTH**. Their damnable doctrines LEAVE OUT all essential requirements, and **ALL** literal commands of Christ which relate to the finding of eternal life, **the search and revelation** of Christ Himself.

**"But there were false prophets also among the people, EVEN AS THERE SHALL BE FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU, WHO PRIVILY SHALL BRING IN DAMNABLE HERESIES, EVEN DENYING THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM, and bring upon themselves swift destruction."**

**"AND MANY SHALL FOLLOW THEIR PERNICIOUS WAYS; by reason of whom THE WAY OF TRUTH**

## **PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

### **SHALL BE EVIL SPOKEN OF." (2 Peter 2:1-2)**

This is one the most important warning of the scriptures. Just after commanding us to ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE in Matthew 7, Jesus warned His followers to BEWARE of false prophets in SHEEP'S CLOTHING. In other words, they will have all the outward appearance of TRUE CHRISTIAN leadership. Why would Jesus issue such a warning following the command to enter the strait gate? Peter and Jude are warning of the same thing, and give us more clues as how to identify them, and what they do. "FALSE TEACHERS" is the double use of *pseudodidaskalos*, which means: **a spurious teacher, a propagator of erroneous Christian doctrine, a false teacher or prophet**. The word "spurious" interestingly means: **of illegitimate birth, a BASTARD**. These illegitimate Christians teach FALSE DOCTRINE. They enter in AMONG THE ENTIRE CHURCH BODY, IN ALL CHRISTIAN DENOMINATIONS. The false doctrine they bring in is a DAMNABLE HERESY. There is ONLY ONE DOCTRINE that damns the soul:

### **FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINE.**

Peter warns they bring these doctrines in "PRIVILY", which is *pareisago*, meaning: **to lead in aside, introduce surreptitiously**. To "lead" means **to influence or guide**; and "aside" means: **away from one's thoughts**. It implies a very subtle swaying from the truth. It sounds like the first group in the *parable of the sower*.

Webster defines the word "SURREPTITIOUS" as: **done by stealth or a clandestine manner, secret or unauthorized; obtained by subreption**. The word "SUBREPTION" means: **In Canon Law: a concealment of the pertinent facts in a petition, as for dispensation or favor, that in certain cases nullifies the grant. In Scots Law: the act of obtaining something by concealing pertinent facts**. The Latin origin of the word actually means: **to steal or rape**. This is EXACTLY what Jude was warning of. That is what 'deny' and 'disavow' means. They 'DENY' Christ by CONTRADICTING and DISAVOWING His sayings. They CONCEAL the STRAIT GATE and NARROW WAY by **REMOVING IT** FROM THEIR DAMNABLE DOCTRINES. They do not speak evil of Jesus Christ, they PRAISE the name of Christ. **But they speak evil of THE WAY OF TRUTH**, the WAY of CHRIST which is the NARROW WAY, the WAY of the CROSS. IT IS FOOLISHNESS TO THEM.

**Jesus said we must enter the strait gate and undergo the narrow way that leads to life. But, if we remove or pervert the meaning of what He said and claim "some other way" such as salvation by simple faith, then we could declare we are saved, when in truth we are not.**

The false shepherds say, "OBEDIENCE IS A WORK! **A PERVERSION OF GRACE!** YOU DO NOT HAVE TO DIE, CHRIST DIED IN YOUR PLACE ON THE CROSS, YOU JUST ACCEPT GOD'S GRACE BY FAITH."

## Christ the Redeemer

This totally describes the instant salvation faith Gospel of Christianity today. Both Jesus and Peter warned us that the MAJORITY of Christians FOLLOW these false Christian teachers, especially in these last days. That means the most COMMON WAY of salvation that is taught today HAS TO BE, ACCORDING TO THE HOLY SCRIPTURES:

### **FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINE.**

***"Not by works of righteousness which we have done,  
but ACCORDING TO HIS MERCY he SAVED US,  
by the washing [BAPTISM] of REGENERATION,  
and renewing of the Holy Ghost;"***

***"Which he shed on us abundantly  
THROUGH Jesus Christ our Saviour;"***

***"That being JUSTIFIED BY HIS GRACE,  
we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life."  
(Titus 3:5-7)***

Read verse 7 carefully because it shows how GRACE has been PERVERTED. Remember, it is GRACE ITSELF the false Christian teachers TURN INTO LASCIVIOUSNESS. The word "LASCIVIOUSNESS" is *aselgeia* (as-elg'-i-a), which means: **licentiousness, filthy, wantonness**. Webster's 1828 dictionary defines "LICENTIOUSNESS" as: **Excessive indulgence of liberty; contempt of the just restraints of law, morality and decorum.** Random House defines "liberty" as: **freedom from control, interference, obligation, restriction, hampering conditions, etc.; power or right of doing, thinking, speaking, etc., according to choice.** In other words, a BROAD WAY Christian walk.

By doing the word studies and comparing these, we find these basically mean that the GRACE of God was 'reversed', by being made: **unrestrained, careless, or reckless; going beyond proper bounds or limits by disregarding Christ's commands, without regard for what is right.** The Grace of God is given as a free gift, **BUT ONLY THROUGH CHRIST, AND IT IS ONLY GIVEN AT THE REVELATION OF CHRIST**, (1 Pet 1:13). The false Christian teachers have taken the GRACE of God BEYOND its proper bounds and without consideration of what is scripturally right and lawful. They totally disregard (leave out, ignore, deny, disavow) the CONDITIONS given by the one we MUST RECKON WITH, THE LORD THAT BOUGHT US. Isn't it interesting that Peter used that term in 2 Peter 2:1: **"the Lord that bought them"**. This is a direct reference to Christ and His blood purchase for redemption, and the *kinsman-redeemer law*. They accept Christ's blood atonement, but REJECT to reckon themselves to Him.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

### **"BEING JUSTIFIED FREELY BY HIS GRACE THROUGH THE REDEMPTION**

**THAT IS IN CHRIST JESUS:"**

**(Romans 3:24)**

This next verse brings this all together. Our justification is through CHRIST'S GRACE. Redemption refers to His blood purchase and legal right to bring us out of the bondage of sin and death. The false Christian teachers unknowingly refuse Christ's redemptive purchase by removing the essential commands of Christ which allows us to 'reckon' with our Redeemer. Because they deny this aspect of redemption, this causes them to speak evil of "THE WAY" and pervert what Grace is and how it is obtained. Do you see? This is all extremely serious. Paul states in both references that we are only JUSTIFIED by "HIS GRACE", the grace that is **IN** Christ Jesus. Grace IS given as a FREE GIFT. But, a gift requires two conditions. First, it must be offered and made available; second, it must be received in order to complete the transaction. The free gift is the gift of righteousness (Romans 5:17), which scripture proves is the *agape* love of God, being offered through the New Covenant. But this gift can only be received through TRUE SPIRITUAL UNION with Christ. The only WAY Jesus gave to be in TRUE UNION WITH HIM, is to enter the strait gate and undergo the narrow way of the CROSS. To pass from DEATH TO LIFE. Life is IN the Son, (John 5:26; 1 John 5:11-12), and that life is at the END of the narrow way. **That makes salvation itself totally conditional upon OBEYING Christ's commands.**

We are saved by the GRACE which is **IN** Christ and THROUGH THE FAITH **OF** Christ, which is verified in: Rom 5:15,17; 1 Tim 1:14; 2 Tim 1:9; and Titus 2:11. But those who come in UNAWARES, were BLIND and disavowed Christ's conditions. They sell their perverted Grace as a license to STEAL from the true children of God. Modern Christian salvation doctrine does in fact teach that the Grace of God is freely given by just **acknowledging** Christ as the Son of God and saying a fabricated "sinners prayer". That Christ died IN OUR PLACE, all we have to do is accept it by FAITH. They usually quote Ephesians 2:8-9.

**"FOR BY GRACE ARE YE SAVED THROUGH FAITH;  
AND THAT NOT OF YOURSELVES: IT IS THE GIFT OF GOD:"**

**"NOT OF WORKS, LEST ANY MAN SHOULD BOAST."**  
**(Ephesians 2:8-9)**

Modern Christian interpretation actually **reverses** verse 8 in intent and claim a person is **SAVED BY FAITH THROUGH GRACE**. According to Paul, the 'WORKS' are WORKS OF THE LAW, (self righteousness). But wide-gate Christianity also stretches 'works' out of context to include any obedience to Christ's commands. The false Christian teachers tell their followers they ARE saved and going to heaven.

## Christ the Redeemer

They claim regeneration is immediately accomplished by an act of faith by a simple decision. James calls it a DEAD faith. Jesus calls it: "climbing up some other WAY". Their evidence of salvation is based upon a changed and "holier than thou" lifestyle, which in reality are WORKS of self righteousness in the name of Jesus. Some even have manifestations of the power of the Holy Spirit. But, modern Christianity has **NO** testimony of the priority search Jesus commands, or an experiential spiritual death, or an actual manifestation of Christ where the GRACE of God (*agape* love) is brought to them. They **DENY** all of that. The NARROW WAY is not a WORK of righteousness or a holiness walk. It is God's test for obedient faith where He supernaturally reveals the wickedness and aloneness of the human heart to the believer. They are proven a condemned sinner, (Gal 2:17; Mat 12:18; John 16:8).

The spurious Christian children tithe and participate in great acts of will worship, but they **PASS OVER the judgment of the narrow way**, therefore they never meet Christ and have the divine love of God bestowed upon them. They "DISAVOW" all Christ's commands.

*"But woe unto you, Pharisees!  
for **YE TITHE** mint and rue and all manner of herbs,  
**AND PASS OVER JUDGMENT AND**  
**THE [AGAPE] LOVE OF GOD:**  
**THESE OUGHT YE TO HAVE DONE,**  
and not to leave the other undone." (Luke 11:42)*

Jesus goes straight to **the very heart of the matter**. The heart of the gospel is not just His *substitutionary* work of atonement, but more importantly the reason God's Grace put Jesus on the cross to begin with. The Pharisees represent the **EXCLUSIVELY RELIGIOUS LEADERS** who are expected to KNOW Biblical truth. Many religious people make it a point in giving their TITHES for the service of God, and Jesus agrees they should. But there is something far more important they failed to do. They totally NEGLECT the FIRST WORK: the judgment that comes from the reproof of God via the narrow way, thereby averting the AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT OF GOD. It is interesting that Jesus used the word "OUGHT", (*dei*), which is pronounced 'DIE', and it means: **it is necessary, it is binding, it is a must, it is needed**, or we may say it is **ABSOLUTELY REQUIRED**. THERE ARE NO OTHER OPTIONS. **JESUS INDICATES THAT JUDGMENT AND THE AGAPE OF GOD ARE THE PRIMARY CONCERNS.**

Notice the sequence Jesus gives: first JUDGMENT, then AGAPE. This judgment is the CONDEMNATION of our SIN that we do not love as God loves. That is the mission of the Holy Spirit, (John 16:8-11) to convict of SIN unto JUDGMENT. But remember that BEFORE judgment comes DEATH. "Once to die, then the judgment". **From death to life.** Now we have three sequential absolute requirements:

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

1. Spiritual death, (circumcision of the heart);
2. Judgment (revelation of Christ);
3. Bestowment of divine "AGAPE" love of God through union with Christ.

**"How that THEY TOLD YOU THERE SHOULD BE MOCKERS  
IN THE LAST TIME,  
WHO SHOULD WALK AFTER THEIR OWN UNGODLY LUSTS."  
(Jude 1:18)**

The word "MOCKERS" here is *empaiktes*, which means: a **false teacher, mocker, scoffer**. To "mock" not only means to ridicule but also: **imitate, defy, or to deceive**. These are Christian LEADERS, PREACHERS, and TEACHERS who come UNDETECTED into ALL of CHRISTIANITY, particularly in the LAST DAYS, PERVERTING GRACE WHICH IN TURN PERVERTS THE DOCTRINE OF SUBSTITUTION. They attempt to **imitate** true Christians but WALK in their own fabricated BROAD WAYS. The word 'lust' is similar to 'lasciviousness'. We just as well could substitute the word 'grace' here for lust. They propagate erroneous Christian doctrines. To 'PROPAGATE' means: **reproduce yourself, to spread a doctrine or practice from person to person; disseminate**. Paul said the same thing in 2 Timothy 4:3, "**...after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers...**". Therefore, we have discovered through Scripture that the **modern version** of the doctrine of *Substitution* is **FALSE DOCTRINE**. A **damnable heresy** that was BROUGHT IN UNDETECTED by FALSE CHRISTIAN TEACHERS within ALL of Christianity. It is a DEADLY doctrine that will DAMN ALL who **accept it as TRUTH**. It **ENTIRELY REMOVES the OBEDIENCE** that God the Father and God the Son require for salvation. It **ENTIRELY REMOVES the NARROW WAY OF THE CROSS**, the BAPTISMS of FIRE, and DEATH.

And finally the BAPTISM of TRUE REGENERATION which comes when the GRACE is brought to you by the **MANIFESTATION** of Jesus Christ. It MOCK'S the GREAT REDEMPTIVE WORK Christ accomplished on his CROSS by the GRACE of God.

**"HAVING A FORM OF GODLINESS,  
BUT DENYING THE POWER THEREOF:  
FROM SUCH TURN AWAY."**

**"For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,"**

**"EVER LEARNING, AND NEVER ABLE  
TO COME TO THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH."  
(2 Tim 3:5-7)**

The word "FORM" is *morphosis*: **appearance, a semblance**. The root words mean: **to fashion the nature of**. The word "GODLINESS" is *eusebeia* and is very



## Christ the Redeemer

interesting. It means: **piety, specifically of the gospel scheme**. Christ IS the gospel theme, so in other words they have the outward nature of appearing CHRIST-LIKE, but they CONTRADICT and DISAVOW the POWER of true godliness. These are LEARNED men. Preachers, teachers, and Doctors of theology.

But the word "NEVER" is *medepote* (may-dep'-ot-eh), which means: **not even ever, never**. That is exactly what Jesus said to the MANY in Matthew 7 and Luke 13:24. Jesus said He is the truth, and true salvation is KNOWING God and Christ, (John 17:3) and Him knowing us, (Mat 7:23).

**"AS MANY AS DESIRE TO MAKE A FAIR SHOW IN THE FLESH, THEY  
CONSTRAIN YOU TO BE CIRCUMCISED;  
ONLY LEST THEY SHOULD SUFFER PERSECUTION  
FOR THE CROSS OF CHRIST."  
(Gal 6:12)**

The word "CONSTRAIN" is *anagkazo*, which actually means: **to compel**. These Christians were being compelled by false teachers to obey Old Testament law by "will worship" instead of true regeneration. These people obviously had not TAKEN UP THEIR OWN CROSS to undergo the BAPTISM INTO DEATH, nor does it appear they understand they should. In the new covenant it is the HEART that has to be circumcised, IN THE SPIRIT not the flesh, (Romans 2:29). The phrase "SUFFER PERSECUTION" is interesting that it does not mean what we would normally think. In the Greek it is the double use of *dioko*, which means: **to pursue, follow after, given to, or press toward**. This suggests that "FOLLOW ME" means SUFFERING on our cross for the sake of Christ. It is by the **narrow way, the way of the cross** that leads to authentic salvation. The MANY Christians of Matthew 7 obviously rejected "THE WAY" Christ commanded, believing it was FOOLISHNESS, but Christ sends them away FOREVER. The MANY make a FAIR SHOW of the FLESH and have WISDOM OF WORDS but have not SUFFERED the simplicity of the cross. They tell you how a Christian is to live, to put off the flesh yourselves and BE more "Christ-like", all in the name of Jesus which is not wholly possible. Modern Christianity's instant all-faith gospel denies the **WAY of the CROSS**. They say: "that is ABSURD, Jesus died so we DO NOT HAVE TO DIE; we just accept what He did BY FAITH! Anything in addition to that is a WORK, a legalism, a PERVERSION of Grace. All we have to do is BELIEVE and TRUST in Jesus and we are saved. What Jesus said was just symbolic. He did not mean for us to literally go sell off our wealth and search till we find him. He does not require one to spend long hours studying doctrine to seek after truth", they declare. The whole idea that Christ's sacrifice on the CROSS made anything other than simple 'belief' obsolete is what we will examine next.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

### 7. ON THE CROSS WITH CHRIST.

**"For Christ sent me not to baptize, BUT TO PREACH THE GOSPEL:  
not with wisdom of words,  
LEST THE CROSS OF CHRIST SHOULD BE MADE OF NONE EFFECT."**

**"FOR THE PREACHING OF THE CROSS  
IS TO THEM THAT PERISH FOOLISHNESS;  
BUT UNTO US WHICH ARE SAVED  
IT IS THE POWER OF GOD."**

**"FOR IT IS WRITTEN, I WILL DESTROY THE WISDOM OF THE WISE,  
AND WILL BRING TO NOTHING THE UNDERSTANDING OF THE PRUDENT."  
(1 Corinthians 1:17-19)**

Who is 'THEM' that the apostle Paul is referring to here? It is a truth that these verses apply to the Jesus Christ rejecters and those with antichrist spirits. But we will find that it also applies to any Christian that rejects THE WAY Jesus command for an unfeigned faith that leads to authentic salvation. Note that the "preaching of the CROSS" is the power of God ONLY to those who ARE saved. To everyone else, including apostate Christianity, it is foolishness. The Greek is *moria* (mo-ree'-ah), which means: **absurd**. The root word for 'FOOLISHNESS' is: **shut up**, which relates to the KEY OF DAVID, (Rev 3:7). If you study out the doctrine of the KEY OF DAVID, you will find it is a power that Christ holds to OPEN or SHUT a person's SPIRITUAL UNDERSTANDING of God's Word. He either OPENS or CLOSES access to the STRAIT GATE. This was covered in-depth in the study: *The Bible Puzzle*.

**"BUT WE PREACH CHRIST CRUCIFIED,  
UNTO THE JEWS A STUMBLINGBLOCK,  
AND UNTO THE GREEKS FOOLISHNESS;"**

**"BUT UNTO THEM WHICH ARE CALLED, BOTH JEWS AND GREEKS, CHRIST  
THE POWER OF GOD,  
AND THE WISDOM OF GOD." (1 Cor 1:23-24)**

This is the first aspect to the "preaching of the cross", the preaching of Christ CRUCIFIED. All of Christianity acknowledges and teaches that Christ suffered and died upon the cross FOR US. The historical Jesus was put to physical death on the CROSS for our atonement, for forgiveness of our sins. The second aspect He was also spiritually put to death as the AUTHOR of our eternal salvation. He commanded for us to spiritually DO THE SAME, **to follow His steps**. He was our example of HOW TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. He said we must pick-up our own cross and follow Him to the place He went, to the place of the skull, which represents a spirit-soul death.

## Christ the Redeemer

But like the second aspect of FAITH in Hebrews 11:6 where the reward of God comes only to those who enter a diligent search to find Him; or that OBEDIENCE to Christ's commands are to be taught to all nations, (Mat 28:19-20), the preaching of OUR crucifixion of the cross is ELIMINATED from modern Christian preaching and teaching, for that is ABSURD to them. This second aspect is what we will explore further.

**"THEN SAID JESUS UNTO HIS DISCIPLES,  
IF ANY MAN WILL COME AFTER ME,  
LET HIM DENY HIMSELF,  
AND TAKE UP HIS CROSS,  
AND FOLLOW ME."**

**"FOR WHOSOEVER WILL SAVE HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT:  
AND WHOSOEVER WILL LOSE HIS LIFE FOR MY SAKE  
SHALL FIND IT."**  
(Matthew 16:24-25)

To the typical modern Christian, they are led to believe that "taking up the cross" is just another term for coming out of the world and being a 'Christian'. Since many interpret that Jesus died upon the cross "INSTEAD OF US", then there can be no application of us bearing any cross. In other words, as the Scripture said, they have literally made the command of Christ of none effect. Notice who Jesus commanded to pick up the CROSS –His disciples, and 'disciples' in Scripture are converted CHRISTIANS, (Acts 11:26).

There are FIVE things that Jesus is telling Christians that they MUST DO:

1. Deny yourself
2. Take up your cross
3. Follow Him
4. Lose your life for His sake
5. Find life

**1. Deny yourself.** The word 'DENY' is G533 *aparneomai* (ap-ar-neh'-om-ahee); which simply means: **to deny utterly, i.e. disown, abstain from**. What is it that we are to deny? Our own selves, our essence; who we are. We can compare it to joining the military. You are to leave the world behind and OBEY what Christ tells you to do because He OWNS you. But, a person cannot truly OBEY except they first seek to understand what He said to do.

**2. Take up your cross.** The word 'CROSS' is *stauros* (stow-ros'); which specifically means: **an instrument of capital punishment; figurative exposure to death, i.e. self-denial; implies the atonement of Christ**. The cross represents an instrument of suffering and death. We are to take up the thing Christ requires that will subject us to this figurative death.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

This will become evident as we study further. The important thing here is that it is **WE** who are to pick up OUR CROSS. Jesus never said He picked up OUR CROSS "for us", or that this command was canceled after Pentecost, (Acts 1:4-5).

**3. Follow Him.** The word for 'FOLLOW' is G190 *akoloutheo* (ak-ol-oo-theh'-o); and is interesting that it means: **to be in the same way with, to accompany as a disciple, to follow after, to reach.** It is a compound of the first Greek letter, the *a* (alpha) and *keleu-thos* which is road. Christ said He was the *alpha*, (Rev 1:8), therefore this literally means: **alpha road**, or "CHRIST'S WAY".

**4. Lose your life for His sake.** 'LOSE' is G622 *apollumi* (ap-ol'-loo-mee); which is: **to destroy fully, to perish or lose, figuratively TO DIE.** This will also be studied in more depth, confirming that Jesus IS commanding we DIE for His sake, to sacrifice ourselves for the reason of Him.

**5. Find life.** The word 'FIND' is G2147 *heurisko* (hyoo-ris'-ko); **to find, get, obtain, perceive, or see.** The 'finding' here is the manifestation of the *agape* Spirit of Jesus Christ to the obedient seeking follower. Of course to 'FIND' this LIFE requires a diligent search, and to KNOW absolute that we have obtained that which we have sought for.

It is interesting that according to the Random House Dictionary the word 'GET' in Hebrew means: **1. a legal document, executed by a rabbi or Jewish court of law, dissolving the marriage bond between husband and wife. 2. a divorce granted in accordance with Jewish law.** A covenant (testament) is a contract, thus making the Bible (both the Old and New Testaments) a LEGAL DOCUMENT that finalizes the marriage of Christ and Israel, (first the Gentiles and then the Jew). Note there are FIVE things listed in the definition of 'FINDING' that are in a logical order in view of the revelation, the FINDING of LIFE: **1. find** (Christ's manifestation, Jn 14:21); **2. get** (the offer of the new covenant, Heb 12:24); **3. obtain** (repentance, 2 Tim 2:25); **4. perceive** (the truth of God, Jn 8:31-32); **5. see** (the Father and the Son, Ps 25:14; Isa 30:20). We also find confirmation of what 'FOLLOW' means:

**"For even hereunto were YE CALLED:**  
**BECAUSE CHRIST ALSO SUFFERED FOR US,**  
**LEAVING US AN EXAMPLE,**  
**THAT YE SHOULD FOLLOW HIS STEPS:"**  
**(1 Peter 2:21)**

The Greek word for "EXAMPLE" is *hupogrammos*, and means: **to copy for imitation.** 'FOLLOW' here means: **to accompany, follow after.** It's root meaning is again the '*a keleu-thos*' or "CHRIST'S WAY". The word "STEPS" is *ichnos*, which is: **a track or step.**

## Christ the Redeemer

Its root meaning is: **come**, which is what Jesus said: "if ye come to me...". Other words, this all means: **you must make an effort in Christ's WAY of the CROSS to come to Him**. It is just another way to say "come, follow me".

Peter is telling us is that IF we are going to COME to Christ, we are going to have to use Jesus' example of Him bearing His cross and follow His sequence of: **taking up the cross, suffering, death, judgment, and resurrection** of a new spiritual birth. These were the 5 major acts involved in Christ's crucifixion, and the exact same 5 things Jesus told us to do for redemption. Again, '5' in Scripture represents redemption. Notice those to whom Peter is addressing, those who WERE 'CALLED'. The whole world is called, (Ps 50:1). Those who respond to the call of God enter into the body of Christ as servants, (Eph 4:11-13). Peter is obviously speaking to those who have entered the body of Christ, Christians. He is telling the Church body there is something they MUST do, to FOLLOW Christ's example of the WAY of the CROSS.

**"FOR MANY ARE CALLED,  
BUT FEW ARE CHOSEN."**

*(Matthew 22:14)*

All through the New Testament is a contrast between the MANY Christians vs. FEW Christians. The word 'MANY' is *polus* (pol-oos'); which means: **largely, mostly, altogether common, the greatest number, the major portion**. The word 'CALLED' is *kletos* (klay-tos'); and means: **invited, i.e. appointed to be a saint**. In contrast to these is the 'FEW', which is *oligos* (ol-ee'-gos); and defined: **puny in number, a little, small**. And it is only the FEW who are 'CHOSEN', which is *eklektos* (ek-lek-tos'); meaning: **to select by implying favorite, choose out, the elect**. This verse is the point to the parable Jesus gave in Matthew 22:1-14 of the BRIDE of Christ, the *eklektos*. The ELECT are obviously those who denied themselves and followed Christ's example TILL they reached the goal-REGENERATION.

**"AND JESUS SAID UNTO THEM, VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU,**

**THAT YE WHICH HAVE FOLLOWED ME,**

**IN THE REGENERATION**

**when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."**

*(Mat 19:28)*

We must consider the context from which this verse was taken. A rich young Jewish man came to Jesus asking HOW to have ETERNAL LIFE, (Mat 19:16). Jesus told him to go sell off his wealth, give it to the poor, and "come and follow me", which he refused. But the disciples themselves, even Peter (at that time), did not understand HOW ONE IS SAVED. Notice here that Jesus used the term "FOLLOWED ME" in the past tense denoting an accomplished task. The Greek for

## PART 1 - *Jesus the Lamb*

"FOLLOWED" is *akoloutheo* (ak-ol-oo-theh'-o), and means: **to be in the same WAY with, i.e. to accompany (specifically as a disciple), to follow and to reach.**

Jesus only gave ONE WAY to find life, THE WAY OF THE CROSS which He also called the STRAIT GATE and NARROW WAY. What is the destination? 'REGENERATION' which is *paliggenesia* (pal-ing-ghen-es-ee'-ah), and is: **spiritual rebirth**. Both Jesus and Peter is saying that IF we desire to be born again, we are going to have to pick up OUR cross, suffer and spiritually die BEFORE God will raise us up to the NEW LIFE. Regeneration is totally CONDITIONAL upon the FOLLOWING of Christ's steps. Did Jesus also have to be born again?

**"AND WHOSOEVER DOTH NOT BEAR HIS CROSS,  
AND COME AFTER ME, CANNOT BE MY DISCIPLE."**

**"SO LIKEWISE, WHOSOEVER HE BE OF YOU  
THAT FORSAKETH NOT ALL THAT HE HATH,  
HE CANNOT BE MY DISCIPLE."**

*(Luke 14:27,33)*

We saw where the modern version of the doctrine of *Substitution*, which is **the heart** of their salvation belief, teaches that believers DO NOT have to sacrifice their life, that Jesus has already died on the cross FOR [INSTEAD OF] THEM. Therefore, they DO NOT have to DIE. Where have we heard this before? **"Ye shall not surely die"**, (Genesis 3:4). Like the serpent, we find it TOTALLY contradicts Christ who COMMANDED us to pick up **OUR OWN CROSS** AND FOLLOW HIM. Where did He go after taking up His cross? INTO A WAY OF SUFFERING, DEATH, JUDGMENT AND RESURRECTION of a NEW LIFE.

This reference to the cross is in relation to Jesus' parable about those are called of God. When Jesus took up His cross, HE HAD ENTERED THE FINAL TRIAL OF HIS FAITH, BEYOND THE POINT OF NO RETURN. HE NOW EXPECTS OF US THE SAME COMMITMENT, THE SAME SACRIFICE UPON A SPIRITUAL CROSS. UNLESS WE DO WHAT JESUS COMMANDS, **IT IS NOT POSSIBLE** TO BE A TRUE DISCIPLE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, TO BE A GENUINE CHRISTIAN. The Greek for "CANNOT" is a compound word *ou-dunamai*, which means: **not to be able or not possible, unable, could not, may not, be of no power**. That means salvation is TOTALLY CONDITIONAL upon our suffering upon the CROSS of Jesus Christ. Otherwise, GENUINE salvation is simply NOT POSSIBLE.

The CROSS is the ancient symbol "TAU" of Baal the sun god, and an instrument the pagan Romans used for punishment and death. Before death it inflicts MUCH SUFFERING. Jesus did not use this metaphor in vain because he knew firsthand what the cross was for and what it does to one who is nailed to it. His command IMPLIES **suffering and death FOR HIS SAKE**, does it not?

## Christ the Redeemer

To verify this, the word "NARROW" of Matthew 7 is G2346 (*thlibo*), and means: **anguish, suffer tribulation, trouble**. Christ is telling us that IF we want eternal life with Him, we MUST FIRST UNDERGO THIS "WAY" OF SUFFERING and spiritual DEATH. This tribulation is not just the result of the daily troubles we have in the world, but the sorrow that comes from the search to find the living Christ. It is temporary but very experiential.

Also, the physical death of Christ on HIS cross is not to be confused with the spirit-soul death we must undergo on a spiritual cross. THEY ARE NOT THE SAME. Our figurative death is NOT for our own atonement which is what Christ died FOR.

**"FOR UNTO YOU IT IS GIVEN IN THE BEHALF OF CHRIST,  
NOT ONLY TO BELIEVE ON HIM,  
BUT ALSO TO SUFFER FOR HIS SAKE;"**  
(*Philippians 1:29*)

This verse is generally interpreted as relating to some type of persecution against Christianity because here **we have something unpleasant to do in addition to BELIEVING**. The 'adversaries' Paul spoke of in that context are Satan and his false apostles. Paul went on to relate that this suffering was also IN him, the suffering that comes by the NARROW WAY of the CROSS. There IS MORE than just believing on Jesus. Belief being alone is DEAD, said James. **True Biblical saving faith is a test of obedience**, and IF one does not UNDERSTAND and OBEY the commands of the Lord Jesus Christ on how to find life, then they DO NOT HAVE TRUE SAVING FAITH.

**"THAT I MAY KNOW HIM, AND THE POWER OF HIS RESURRECTION,  
AND THE FELLOWSHIP OF HIS SUFFERINGS,  
BEING MADE CONFORMABLE UNTO HIS DEATH;"**  
(*Philippians 3:10*)

Paul in the first chapter of Philippians, gave testimony of the suffering and agony that was IN him. Now Paul gives the HOPE and END to his suffering for the sake of Christ: to KNOW God and Christ. Paul not only expected to experience the power of new life, but also experience the suffering Christ had before the new life was given. Notice that this type of suffering is 'conforming' to Christ's DEATH.

**"And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing,  
THAT AS YE ARE PARTAKERS OF THE SUFFERINGS,  
SO SHALL YE BE ALSO OF THE CONSOLATION."**  
(*2 Corinthians 1:7*)

The suffering is an IMPERATIVE condition. These Christian souls are not yet saved, but they are obviously on the NARROW WAY. Paul said we are saved by HOPE, (Rom 8:24). The word 'PARTAKERS' means: **fellowship**. Like Paul, they are to know the fellowship of Christ's sufferings of the cross.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

The 'consolation' is the joy and comfort that comes with the gift of eternal life, which is regeneration. Also notice the tense of the conditions. They ARE IN the sufferings, so that they SHALL BE of the consolation. This is not the instant make believe spiritual birth propagated by the false prophets and their "sinner's prayer". The purpose of the CROSS was to cause shame, much suffering and then a cursed death.

**"I AM FORGOTTEN AS A DEAD MAN OUT OF MIND:  
I AM LIKE A BROKEN VESSEL."**

*(Psalm 31:12)*

We find not only confirmation in the old testament of the WAY of truth, but much insight that describes the experience. Here we find the reference to a figurative death. The word 'MIND' is *leb*, the Hebrew word for **heart, the center of spiritual and mental awareness**. This metaphor of death is the separation of the mind of soul from the heart of our spirit, (Heb 4:12).

Is it coincidence Christ was crucified at a place called "THE SKULL"? The word 'BROKEN' describes the NARROW WAY and what it does to those who have been obedient and entered into it. 'BROKEN' is Strong's number H6, '*abad* (aw-bad)', which means: **to wander away, i.e. to LOSE ONESELF by implying to perish, break, destroy or destruction, not escape, fail, cause to perish, be undone utterly, be void of, have no way to flee**. The *Random House* definition of 'undone' is: **to be brought to destruction or ruin**. These definitions are totally confirming to "LOSE YOUR LIFE".

Now compare what we have just learned with these verses from Psalms:

**"FOR HE SATISFIETH THE LONGING SOUL,  
AND FILLETH THE HUNGRY SOUL WITH GOODNESS."**

**"SUCH AS SIT IN DARKNESS AND IN THE SHADOW OF DEATH,  
BEING BOUND IN AFFLICTION AND IRON;"**

**"BECAUSE THEY REBELLED AGAINST THE WORDS OF GOD,  
AND CONTEMNED THE COUNSEL OF THE MOST HIGH:"**

**"THEREFORE  
HE BROUGHT DOWN THEIR HEART  
WITH LABOUR;  
THEY FELL DOWN, AND THERE WAS NONE TO HELP."**

**"THEN THEY CRIED UNTO THE LORD IN THEIR TROUBLE,  
and he saved them out of their distresses."**



## Christ the Redeemer

### **"HE BROUGHT THEM OUT OF DARKNESS AND THE SHADOW OF DEATH, AND BRAKE THEIR BANDS IN SUNDER." (Psalm 107:9-14)**

We want to look at a few of the key words in this passage from Psalms because it gives insight into the **REAL WAY OF THE CROSS**. Beginning with verse 9, we find the companion to Jesus' saying of Matthew 5:6. Notice it is only the LONGING SOUL that God satisfies. The word "LONGING" is *shaqaq* (shaw-kak'), which basically means: **to seek greedily, have appetite**. And the word "HUNGRY" is *ra'eb* (raw-abe'), which means: **famished, be compelled to fulfill a real need, a strong desire**. The word 'famished' is: **extreme hunger, to starve to death**.

The search for the righteousness of Christ comes from the strongest desire to fulfill a deep need, which Jesus symbolized as HUNGER, (Mat 5:6). The more we search to understand the TRUTH, the stronger hunger grows to the point of starvation unto DEATH. Does this sound like the instant *anon* salvation of the MANY?

The next phrase to consider is "bound in affliction and iron". We are all born into Satan's kingdom of darkness, the resemblance of death. But, those who undergo the NARROW WAY come to fully realize and experience it. The word 'DARKNESS' here is *choshek* (kho-shek'), and figuratively means: **misery, destruction, death, ignorance, sorrow, wickedness**. 'BOUND' is *'aciyr* (aw-sere') which means: **a captive, those which are bound, a prisoner**. The root word means: **a harness**. Other words, to be under direction and manipulation of some power or force. The word "AFFLICTION" is *'oniy* (on-ee'), and means essentially the same as 'darkness' and 'narrow' of Matthew 7 which is: **depression, misery, afflicted, trouble**. Its root word means: **abased, humbled**. And the word "IRON" comes from *Birzowth* (beer-zoth'), which means: **to pierce**. This is exactly what we have seen in relation to being put upon the cross of Christ. This affliction comes from the reproof and chastisement of God to bring down the heart ONLY after picking up our cross and walking in the narrow way of Christ.

Notice the next verse in Psalms 107 gives the reason: rebellion against the words of God, and contempt against the counsel of God. That is the original sin of Adam and Eve. The only thing God told them NOT to do was to eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. But they REBELLED against the counsel of God by doing what He commanded them NOT to do. Their fall caused a spirit of enmity within man against God. IF a person OBEYS and submits to the chastisement of God, then God begins a work on their heart. The phrase "BROUGHT DOWN" is the double use of *kana'* (kaw-nah'), which means: **to humiliate, vanquish [overcome], to bring down low into subjection, to humble, or subdue**. The word "LABOUR" is *'amal* (aw-mawl'), and in this context means: **toil, labour, a wearing effort, worry, grievousness, labour, misery, pain, sorrow, toil, travail, trouble, wearisome**. Then 'HEART' of course is *leb*, which refers to the center spiritual essence of man.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Notice that this is something GOD DOES to US. It is NOT something we do ourselves. It is not a mental guilt trip being sorry for the things we have done, nor to undergo some type of "will worship" and feeling sorry for yourself. This IS experiential and takes place in the SPIRIT.

**"WHEN MEN ARE CAST DOWN,  
THEN THOU SHALT SAY, THERE IS LIFTING UP;  
AND HE SHALL SAVE THE HUMBLE PERSON."  
(Job 22:29)**

If we truly desire to be saved from our sins and receive the gift of eternal life, then we MUST be HUMBLED as Christ our example. Our heart will be brought down and broken. The phrase "CAST DOWN" in Hebrew is *shaphel* (shaw-fale'); which means: **to depress or sink, especially to humiliate, abase, bring down, debase, humbled, be made lower.** Next, notice the HOPE implied in the next line that there IS a lifting up.

**"And though the Lord give you  
THE BREAD OF ADVERSITY,  
AND THE WATER OF AFFLICTION,  
yet shall not thy teachers be removed into a corner any more, but  
THINE EYES SHALL SEE THY TEACHERS:"  
(Isaiah 30:20)**

This verse confirms the narrow way of suffering for the sake of the word of God, as well as the manifestation of Christ to the one seeking Him. The word 'BREAD' is a metaphor for DOCTRINE, and the word 'ADVERSITY' is *tsar*, and means: **narrow, sorrow, strait, tribulation, trouble.** 'WATER' is a metaphor for **teaching, i.e. instruction in doctrine**, and 'AFFLICTION' is H3905, *lachats* (law-khats') which is: **to press, distress, afflict, crush, force, hold fast, oppress.** This defines the command of Christ in Matthew 7. Notice it is after the suffering the REVELATION OF CHRIST comes: **to literally see our teachers, our Creator God, the Elohiym of Genesis 1.** This is what Jesus experienced on His cross. This is what He also commanded us to do:

**"ENTER YE IN  
AT THE STRAIT GATE:  
for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many  
there be which go in thereat:"**

**"BECAUSE  
STRAIT IS THE GATE,  
AND**

## Christ the Redeemer

**NARROW IS THE WAY,**  
**WHICH LEADETH**  
**UNTO LIFE,**  
**AND FEW THERE BE THAT FIND IT."**  
*(Matthew 7:13-14)*

Notice again these FIVE elements that Jesus' commands us to do:

1. Enter ye in
2. The strait gate
3. Narrow is the way
4. Which leadeth
5. Unto life

**1. Enter ye in.** The word 'ENTER' is *eiserchomai* (ice-er'-khom-ahee); which means: **arise, come in, enter into, go in through**. This is a decision we must make to obey Christ's command. This decision requires us to DENY OURSELF, turn our back on our life, and literally enter into the new covenant of Christ.

**2. The strait gate.** The word 'strait' is G4728 *stenos* (sten-os'); and is defined: **narrow (from obstacles standing close about)**. It has the same root word as does 'CROSS', which is *histemi* (his'-tay-mee); which means: **to stand, abide, continue in, covenant, establish, present**.

It compares to G5087 which is: **to kneel. to sink down**, or we could say 'HUMBLE'. The word 'GATE' is the entrance way and means: **a folding entrance**. It has the implication that entrance to the narrow way may be open or shut. In the study *The Bible Puzzle*, it was shown that the 'GATE' is a metaphor for DOCTRINE. Either the (true) "STRAIT GATE" doctrine of the new covenant that leads to LIFE, or a "WIDE GATE" (false) Christian doctrine that leads to eternal ruin. Therefore the "STRAIT GATE" IS the same as to PICK UP THE CROSS.

**3. Narrow is the way.** The word 'NARROW' is *thlibo* (thlee'-bo); and is: **to crowd, afflict, throng, suffer tribulation, trouble**. The root word means: **a worn rut or path**. The word 'WAY' is *hodos* (hod-os'); and means: **a road, by implying a progress (the route, act or distance); a mode or means, a journey, or highway**. It is the "alpha-road", CHRIST'S WAY that He suffered and WE are to FOLLOW His steps.

**4. Which leadeth.** Greek for 'LEADETH' is *apago* (ap-ag'-o); which is defined: **carry or lead away, put to death, take away**. It means the same as "LOSE YOUR LIFE" for the sake of Christ. It is an experiential spirit-soul death we are to under go upon our own CROSS.

**5. Unto life.** By now this should be obvious. This LIFE is IN Christ Jesus, (1 Jn 5:11-13), which is at THE END of the NARROW WAY. Therefore IF we are to come to Christ, we must enter into the narrow way of the CROSS until we find Him.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

This is the same five part sequence as the WAY of the CROSS: [1] **self-denial** to enter in, [2] **taking up** of the strait gate, [3] **follow** the suffering of the narrow way, [4] **losing your life** by being led into death and judgment, [5] **finding LIFE** that is IN Christ Jesus. We are COMMANDED by Jesus to ENTER IN. Notice there are TWO gates His followers may choose to enter.

The WISE enter a strait gate Christianity, the FOOLISH go in the wide gate Christianity. Each has an opposing gate and way. They both have destinations that are opposed to each other. One leads to eternal DEATH, the other to eternal LIFE. The root word for 'wide' is *plasso*, which means: **to mold or fabricate**, in other words it is a FALSE WAY. Notice the narrow way has a FINDING whereas the broad way does not. The word 'FINDING' is *heurisko* (hyoo-ris'-ko), which is: **to get, obtain, perceive, see**. It relates to the literal REVELATION of Jesus Christ. To FIND implies to have SEARCHED for, just as Christ commanded in Matthew 6:33. **Notice wide gate Christianity OMITTS the SEARCH for there is no finding.** The wise Christian hears and DOES what Christ said to do, and the foolish hears but DOES NOT DO what Christ commanded, (Mat 7:24-27).

As Eve believed the Serpent's counsel over God's, so do the MANY Christians believe the counsel of false teachers over Christ. The result is the same – **eternal death**.

**"THY WRATH LIETH HARD UPON ME,  
AND THOU HAST AFFLICTED ME  
WITH ALL THY WAVES. Selah."  
(Psalm 88:7)**

The Hebrew definitions of the key words here are very interesting. The root word for "WRATH" is *yacham* (yaw-kham'), which means: **to be hot; to conceive**. And the root word for "WAVES" is *shabar* (shaw-bar'), the word used for 'broken' earlier which is: **to burst, to break down, broken hearted, to crush or destroy; or bring to the birth**. This confirms that it is the NEGATIVE things of God that brings forth the POSITIVE. The conception of God **breaks down** our heart to DESTROY it so that we can be BORN FROM ABOVE. He chastens us by His **hot wrath** so the seed of the word will TAKE DEEP ROOT into fertile ground.

The Hebrew word "SELAH" is *celah* (seh'-law), which is: **suspension, a pause**; and its root word means: **to weigh, or value**. It is a signal for us to stop and seriously consider what God is saying. To take pause and weigh the value of what is said. It actually is a warning to those who seek understanding. To consider the message here, we find that in the narrow way, the affliction we suffer from God's wrath comes like the waves of the ocean to break our spirit. The reproof of God repeatedly beats upon us until it weakens us and causes us to buckle and bend the knees. To make us fall down and be overwhelmed [baptized] by the washing of water by the Word, (Eph 5:26).

## Christ the Redeemer

**"...MY SOUL *FAINTETH* FOR THY SALVATION:  
BUT *I HOPE IN THY WORD.*"**  
(Psalm 119:81)

The word "FAINTETH" is *kalah* (kaw-law'), which means: **to end, to cease, be finished, to perish; to complete, prepare, consume; destroy (utterly), be done, be an end of, expire, cause to fail, faint, fulfill, bring to pass, wholly reap, make clean riddance, quite take away, waste.** How many more definitions do we need to prove that for true salvation God will bring the soul down to an experiential suffering and spiritual death? The word for "SALVATION" is *teshuw'ah* (tesh-oo-aw'), which is: **to rescue spiritually; deliverance, help, safety, victory.** The root word means: **to be FREE.** What are we to be FREE of? The bondage to sin and eternal death. Notice that this confirms that salvation IS NOT A QUICK FIX, but takes time to humble the soul down to ruin. It shows the desperate HUNGER to be delivered IN TRUTH. This also shows the application of TRUE SAVING FAITH. The Hebrew for "HOPE" in this application is *yachal* (yaw-chal'), which is defined: **to wait by implying to be patient, cause to have hope, be pained, stay, tarry, trust, wait.** This is what Paul said, we are saved by HOPE; and faith is the substance of things HOPED FOR. To further prove this, consider this Old Testament verse:

**"IT IS GOOD THAT A MAN SHOULD BOTH  
HOPE AND QUIETLY WAIT  
FOR THE SALVATION OF THE LORD."**  
(Lamentations 3:26)

The word for "HOPE" in this verse is interesting. It is Strong's number H2342 *chuw'el* (khool), which essentially means: **to writhe in pain especially of parturition or fear; figuratively to wait, make to bring forth, make to calve, fall grievously with pain, to look, be in pain, be much (sore) pained, rest, to shake, to shapen, sorrow, stay, tarry, travail with pain, tremble, trust, wait carefully (patiently), be wounded.** The word "parturition" means: **the process of bringing forth young.** This is similar to what WAVES and BROKEN means. A grievous sorrow as a woman in travail who brings forth a manchild. Jesus made the same comparison, (John 16:20-22). The JOY comes "in the morning" AFTER the SORROW of darkness. The ANON with great joy people in Jesus' parable of the sower, claim IMMEDIATE JOY, but in time they FALL AWAY. Jesus used the following parable to describe the humbling of the narrow way:

**"When thou art *bidden* of any man to a wedding,  
sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden  
of him;"**

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

***"And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room."***

***"BUT WHEN THOU ART BIDDEN, GO AND SIT DOWN  
IN THE LOWEST ROOM;***

***that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee,  
Friend, go up higher:***

***THEN***

***shalt thou have worship [respect] in the presence of them that  
sit at meat [study doctrine] with thee."***

***"FOR WHOSOEVER EXALTETH HIMSELF SHALL BE ABASED;  
AND HE THAT HUMBLETH HIMSELF SHALL BE EXALTED."***

***(Luke 14:8-11)***

We want to take a close look at the key phrase of verse 10. The word "BIDDEN" of course means: **CALLED**. The word "GO" is very interesting. It is *poreuomai* (por-yoo'-om-ahee), which means: **to traverse, travel, especially to remove or figuratively DIE, to depart, go one's way, make a journey, to walk**. It essentially means the same as *hodos*, the 'WAY'. The root word is *peira* (pi'-rah), which is: **to pierce, a test, to attempt, to experience, assaying, a trial**. That is EXACTLY what the narrow way is, THE TRIAL OF OUR FAITH. To pierce us through upon a spiritual cross with many sorrows and a spiritual type of DEATH. IT THE TRUE TEST FOR GENUINE FAITH, the **baptism of fire**.

Likewise, the phrase "SIT DOWN" is the double use of *anapipto* (an-ap-ip'-to), which means: **to fall back, lie down, lean back, sit down (to meat)**. The word 'meat' refers to DOCTRINE. The root words mean: **a repeated falling down**. Again, this relates back to the word "WAVES". To be repeatedly SLAPPED DOWN.

***THIS IS EXACTLY WHAT HAPPENS IN THE NARROW WAY OF THE CROSS. IT IS A LONG GREIVOUS JOURNEY OF HEAVINESS, TROUBLES and SORROW, ALL THE WHILE HUNGERING TO FIND THE TRUTH AND BE DELIVERED. WE BECOME CONSUMED BY IT, OVERWHELMED. WE FALL DOWN AND THERE IS NONE TO HELP, WE FIND OURSELVES HELPLESS AND ALONE IN THIS JOURNEY OF PURE HOPE WHICH IS THE TEST FOR TRUE SAVING FAITH.***

The 'humbling' we are do is to SUBMIT to the commands of the Lord Jesus Christ: understand what the strait gate is, enter it and take the journey of the WAY that is NARROW. Not turning to the left or right. To remain there till He that called us COMES. It is humbling ourselves to the will of God, but God's humbling is the bringing down of our heart. The word 'LOWEST' is *eschatos* (es'-khat-os), which means: **farthest, final place, end of, the last, latter end, lowest, uttermost**. The lowest place for anyone is utter despair and a CRUSHED SPIRIT. There is no lower place for a living soul. The definition of 'ROOM' in this context figuratively means: **a condition**.

## Christ the Redeemer

The lowest CONDITION a person can be in is this total abasement, misery which may be similar to the suffering in Hell. This is the ultimate condition a person MUST face BEFORE the revelation of Christ comes. To suffer and wait as Christ suffered. In fact it is exactly what Peter referred to. Then we find the Old Testament companion Scripture of Jesus' parable:

**"PUT NOT FORTH THYSELF IN THE PRESENCE OF THE KING,**  
**[THE LORD GOD]**  
**AND STAND NOT IN THE PLACE OF GREAT MEN:"**  
**[THE TRUE REGENERATED, THE SAINTS OF GOD]**

**"FOR BETTER IT IS THAT IT BE SAID UNTO THEE,**  
**COME UP HITHER [HIGHER];**  
**THAN THAT THOU SHOULDEST BE PUT LOWER**  
**IN THE PRESENCE OF THE PRINCE [JESUS CHRIST]**  
**WHOM THINE EYES HAVE SEEN." [THE REVELATION OF CHRIST]**  
**(Proverbs 25:6-7)**

We are to seek the literal, experiential PRESENCE of our Creator. **A person's creator IS THEIR GOD.** We are to see Him with our eyes. That is the primary will of God the Father, (Jn 6:40) and we are to continue to seek and hope **till** we FIND HIM. Hebrew for "LOWER" is *shaphel* (shaw-fale'), which means: **to depress or especially to humiliate, abase, bring down, debase, humble, make or put low.** Notice in both references, that WE are to journey down the narrow way, till Christ manifests Himself to us and brings us up out of the pit of total despair.

**"For the time is come THAT JUDGMENT**  
**must begin at the house of God: AND IF IT FIRST BEGIN AT US,**  
**WHAT SHALL THE END BE OF THEM**  
**THAT OBEY NOT THE GOSPEL OF GOD?"**

**"AND IF THE RIGHTEOUS SCARCELY BE SAVED,**  
**WHERE SHALL THE UNGODLY AND THE SINNER APPEAR?"**

**"WHEREFORE LET THEM THAT SUFFER**  
**ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD**  
**commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing,**  
**as unto a faithful Creator."**  
**(1 Peter 4:17-19)**

Peter reveals that even the righteous are scarcely saved. Greek for 'SCARCELY' is *molis* (mol'-is), which means: **with difficulty, hardly, scarcely, with much work.**

## PART 1 - *Jesus the Lamb*

True salvation, according to the Word of God, is the most difficult thing anyone will ever undergo, and the majority of Christians will utterly reject anyone who testifies to something other than simple FAITH. Note that this SUFFERING is according to God's will.

### 8. BAPTISM OF DEATH.

Now that obedience to Christ to pick up OUR CROSS and suffer for His sake, (according to the will of God), is proven to be required beyond any shadow of doubt, we will examine the other false claim: "Since Christ died IN OUR PLACE, we DO NOT have TO DIE".

**"BUT I HAVE A BAPTISM TO BE BAPTIZED WITH;  
AND HOW AM I STRAITENED TILL IT BE ACCOMPLISHED!"**  
(Luke 12:50)

"... And Jesus said unto them,  
**YE SHALL INDEED DRINK OF THE CUP THAT I DRINK OF;  
AND WITH THE BAPTISM THAT I AM BAPTIZED  
WITHAL SHALL YE BE BAPTIZED:"**  
(Mark 10:39)

What baptism is Jesus talking about? When His ministry began, Jesus was baptized by John and submersed in the water of the river Jordan. Like the circumcision of Abraham, the Baptism of John symbolizes in the flesh what is to take place in the spirit, (Deu 30:6; Rom 2;29). As proven in the study *The Bible Puzzle*, 'water' is a metaphor for God's instruction of the narrow way. A provision of the New Covenant to cleanse us from the lies and idols in our hearts. But this was the *baptism of death* that Jesus was actually DREADING. It put Him into STRAITS.

This is also the baptism of DEATH that Paul preached, (Rom 6:4). It involves the preaching of the CROSS and Jesus said we shall experience this same baptism. The root words for 'baptism' mean: **to overwhelm, to fully wet or wash**. *Random House* defines 'whelm' as: **to overcome utterly, to overwhelm, to cover over**. Is Jesus not describing the same thing we found in the Psalms? We also find this definition of BAPTISM in a popular Christian reference book:

---

**BAPTISM**, "(c) of the overwhelming afflictions and judgments to which the Lord voluntarily submitted on the cross... (d) of the suffering His followers would experience, NOT OF A VICARIOUS CHARACTER, but in fellowship with the sufferings of their Master.

...In the early chapters of the four Gospels and in Acts 1:5; 11:16; 19:4, it is used of the rite performed by John the Baptist who called upon the people to repent that they might receive remission of sins. Those who obeyed came "confessing their sins", thus acknowledging their unfitness to be in the Messiah's coming kingdom...

---



## Christ the Redeemer

---

Distinct from this is the 'baptism' enjoined by Christ, Matt 28:19, a '**baptism' to be undergone by believers, thus witnessing to their identification with Him in death, burial and resurrection.**' [Vine's Expository Dictionary, pg. 50, emphasis added]

---

This is a most interesting definition for several reasons. First notice definition (d) states "**the suffering His followers would experience**". Then it identifies this baptism of suffering is "NOT OF A VICARIOUS CHARACTER". Random House defines 'VICARIOUS' as: **1. performed, exercised, received, or suffered in place of another: vicarious punishment. 2. taking the place of another person or thing; acting or serving as a substitute. 3. felt or enjoyed through imagined participation in the experience of others.** This is saying the follower's BAPTISM into Christ's death, burial, and resurrection is NOT AN ACT OF SUBSTITUTION, NOR IS IT AN IMAGINED (SYMBOLIC), BUT IS EXPERIENTIAL! Vines is describing the WAY OF THE CROSS, yet you will not find this preached in the various Christian denominations, for they claim Jesus did all that IN OUR STEAD.

In Hebrews 6:1-2, there are SIX tenets of the faith listed as the "principles of the doctrine of Christ". The third principle is the "**doctrine of baptisms**". From studying the *doctrine of baptisms* from scripture, we find there are FIVE BAPTISMS, and again FIVE is the number for REDEMPTION in Scripture.

- 1. Baptism of Repentance;** (Mat 3:11, Mrk 1:4, Luke 7:29, Acts 18:25)
- 2. Baptism of the Holy Spirit;** (Mat 3:11, Mrk 1:8, Jn 1:33, Acts 1:5, 19:1-6)
- 3. Baptism of Fire;** (Mat 3:11, Luke 3:16, 1 Pet 1:7, Jer 5:14, 20:9)
- 4. Baptism unto Death;** (Mark 10:39, Rom 6:3-4, Gal 3:27)
- 5. Baptism of Regeneration (baptism into Christ);** (Gal 3:27, Col 2:12)

The Baptism of John in the New Testament is also called: the baptism of water, baptism in the name of Christ, or the baptism of repentance [from dead works]. Modern Christianity observes the first baptism of John symbolizing the person has been 'converted' to the Christian faith.

Some evangelical sects often pursue a 'power' baptism of the Holy Spirit, and Christian denominations ignore the other three baptisms. However, we find here another parallel to the FIVE steps Jesus requires in the WAY of the CROSS and the NARROW WAY. The doctrine should be thoroughly studied because there are many more Scriptures involved. But here is shown how it harmonizes with the commands of Christ.

**1. Baptism of Repentance;** (a.k.a. baptism of John or water). The first baptism typically follows a "profession of faith", (1Tim 6:12). This profession is to acknowledge sins and repent from dead works, which is the DENYING yourself to 'follow' Christ's steps, or to "enter in" the strait gate.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

This baptism is only conversion to Christianity, and not to be confused with the act of spiritual regeneration.

**2. Baptism of the Holy Spirit;** From the study *The Bible Puzzle*, it was shown what the primary mission of the Holy Spirit is: to GUIDE us "IN THE WAY", to teach us, reprove us of sin, righteousness, and judgment. That is, IF a person OBEYS Christ by picking up THEIR CROSS, which is entering into the STRAIT GATE doctrine of searching the truth of God and His word.

**3. Baptism of Fire;** Peter said that our faith was to be TRIED by fire, 1 Pet 1:7. And the WORDS of God are like a BURNING FIRE, (Jer 20:9). This is the same as "water of affliction and the bread of adversity" Isaiah testified of. This is the FOLLOWING of Christ's suffering and the NARROW WAY to the place of the 'skull'.

**4. Baptism unto Death;** This baptism is the result of the 'WAY', the LOSING of our life, being LEAD AWAY down into an experiential type of death that separates our spirit from our soul (Heb 4:12), which is required before judgment and spiritual rebirth, (Luk 11:42; 1 Cor 15:36).

**5. Baptism of Regeneration;** This is the GOAL, the END of our FAITH which is to be BORN AGAIN with the *agape* love Spirit of God and Christ. This is the REFRESHING.

***"For then must he [Jesus] often have suffered since the foundation of the world:  
BUT NOW ONCE IN THE END OF THE WORLD HATH HE APPEARED TO PUT AWAY  
SIN BY THE SACRIFICE OF HIMSELF."***

***"AND  
AS IT IS APPOINTED UNTO MEN ONCE TO DIE,  
BUT AFTER THIS THE JUDGMENT:"***

***"SO CHRIST WAS ONCE OFFERED TO BEAR THE SINS OF MANY;  
AND  
UNTO THEM THAT LOOK FOR HIM  
SHALL HE APPEAR  
THE SECOND TIME WITHOUT SIN UNTO SALVATION."  
*(Hebrews 9:26-28)****

The word "AND" means: **also, or in addition to**. So, **in addition to** the sacrifice of Christ for our sins, man is **ALSO appointed once to die**. Then following death, comes **judgment**. NO ONE is exempt from these even though Christ sacrificed Himself for us, because death is not what He *substituted* for. The word "appointed" is *apokeimai*, which basically means: **to be reserved, to await**. There are no other options, it even applied to Jesus because he was also born under the law. This establishes two sequential acts: FIRST DEATH, THEN JUDGEMENT. **IF** Christ died so that his people do not have to die, then either the Bible text is in error, or

## Christ the Redeemer

modern interpretation is in error. This is a plain statement, that requires no interpretation. **ALL DIE, THEN JUDGED.**

Next, carefully read the last part, for there are two additional conditions. First, Christ "to bear the sins of many". Again, this refers to his substitution of the sacrifice FOR the sins of the sinner. That makes it possible for us to be reconciled to and approach God, but only through Christ. Second, we find an additional but exclusive group of believers. **These NOT only believe the HISTORICAL CHRIST, but SEARCH for the RESURRECTED Christ!** It is to these seeking souls that Christ reveals Himself to them for their SALVATION. The word "LOOK" is *apekdechomai* (ap-ek-dekh'-om-ahee), which means: **to expect fully, to look for, to wait for.** The condition for Christ coming to them is that they LOOK AND WAIT FOR HIM, an all out diligent search to FIND HIM. Greek for 'APPEAR' is *optanomai*, (op-tan'-om-ahee) which literally means: **to gaze with wide-open eyes, as at something remarkable.** This is NOT a reference to the second advent of Christ to "gather together" His elect, but the REVELATION of Christ that comes at the appointed time of their salvation, (1 Pet 1:13) It implies there is to be a revelation. No where does it imply that BELIEF is a *substitute* for the finding. And since it is eternal spiritual life the Christian desires, then spiritual DEATH and JUDGEMENT must come **before** spiritual LIFE. If this is true, then there should be clear scriptural indication of it. Compare these two passages from Matthew and John:

**"AND HE THAT TAKETH NOT HIS CROSS, AND FOLLOWETH AFTER ME, IS NOT WORTHY OF ME."**

**"HE THAT FINDETH HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT: AND HE THAT LOSETH HIS LIFE FOR MY SAKE SHALL FIND IT."**  
(Matthew 10:38-39)

**"Verily, verily, I say unto you, EXCEPT A CORN OF WHEAT FALL INTO THE GROUND AND DIE, IT ABIDETH ALONE: BUT IF IT DIE, IT BRINGETH FORTH MUCH FRUIT."**

**"HE THAT LOVETH HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT; AND HE THAT HATETH HIS LIFE IN THIS WORLD SHALL KEEP IT UNTO LIFE ETERNAL."**  
(John 12:24-25)

Many Christians assume this reference to 'death' applies only to Jesus. But Jesus Himself also applied it to those who take up their own cross. The word "WHEAT" is used by Christ in His parables to represent CHRISTIANS, and a 'CORN' of wheat is a single believer.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Christ has laid down the CONDITIONAL requirement, that **IF** a follower is going to have spiritual UNION with Him, they **MUST** DIE FIRST. This DEATH must be upon OUR OWN spiritual cross.

Jesus died FOR US, for the forgiveness of sins, but then He commands us TO DIE that we might bring forth the fruit of RIGHTEOUSNESS as He did. It is our spirit sin nature of a feigned love that MUST die. The word "HATETH" is *miseo*, which means: **to love less**. We obviously have to be tested that our love for God and Christ is greater than it is for ourselves by obeying Him unto the death of the cross, as He did for us. For there is no greater love, (John 15:13). The 'MANY' of Matthew 7 obviously did not realize that they had to pay the selfsame price.

The Greek for "ALONE" is important. It is Strong's no. G3441 (*monos*), which means: **to remain single, alone, by themselves**. It is the origin of our English prefix *mono-*, which is the opposite of "union". The flip side of the condition is that **EXCEPT** we die first, we will REMAIN UTTERLY **ALONE FOREVER**. But, **IF** we die we will bring forth much fruit. The fruit we are to bring forth is the fruit of righteousness of Christ which comes from His divine "AGAPE" love. (Heb 12:11). Consider a single grain of wheat. It is first placed in the lowest place, the ground. *Water* (God's instruction), and *light* [illumination of mind] causes it to undergo a CHANGE. It is NO LONGER what it was, but becomes something NEW by a miracle of God. A new creation via regeneration. When it matures, it will bring forth its own fruit.

***"But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?"***

***"THOU FOOL, THAT WHICH THOU SOWEST IS NOT QUICKENED, EXCEPT IT DIE:"***  
***(1 Corinthians 15:35-36)***

This verse also has to be read carefully. The word "QUICKENED" is *zoopoieo*, which is: **to give life**. It comes from the same root word as *zoe* which means: **spiritual life**. The word "EXCEPT" also means: **before**. Paul calls these people FOOLS, meaning ignorant. They apparently do not understand that the [spiritually] DEAD who have physically died are not raised with a body, but only those who have spiritual LIFE, (been quickened) are raised with a body, (Mark 12:24-27). And, only those who have first underwent this spirit-soul death have spiritual life. Again, we find that spirit-soul DEATH is required **BEFORE** spiritual LIFE is given, which is also called the 'QUICKENING'.

***"For as IN Adam ALL DIE, even so IN Christ SHALL ALL BE MADE ALIVE."***  
***(1 Corinthians 15:22)***

## Christ the Redeemer

The word "ALIVE" is *zoopoieo*, the same Greek word for **quicken**. This verse verifies that ALL MANKIND DIES (spiritually and physically), and that LIFE (spiritual and physical immortality) is ONLY for those IN [spiritual union with] Christ. Christ died and was resurrected. Therefore, in order to be IN spiritual union with Christ, we also must be in his likeness of death and resurrection, (Rom 6:5). This verse of scripture is CONDITIONAL. **Apart from being IN Christ, there is NO life.** It does not say "in the Holy Spirit shall all be made alive", but IN CHRIST. For the Spirit of God that raised Him from the dead is also IN Christ. (Rom 8:9-11). It is a great MYSTERY that only the FEW come to understand.

***"Therefore WE ARE BURIED WITH HIM BY***

### ***BAPTISM INTO DEATH:***

***that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life."***

***"For IF we have been planted together in THE LIKENESS OF HIS DEATH, we shall be also in the LIKENESS OF HIS RESURRECTION:"***

***"Knowing this, THAT OUR OLD MAN IS***

### ***CRUCIFIED WITH HIM,***

***THAT THE BODY OF SIN MIGHT BE DESTROYED, THAT HENCEFORTH WE SHOULD NOT SERVE SIN."***

***"FOR HE THAT IS DEAD IS FREED FROM SIN."***

***(Romans 6:4-7)***

The brings it all together. The phrase "BURIED WITH HIM" is one word *sunthapto*, which means: **to enter in company with, figuratively to assimilate spiritually (to Christ by a sepulcher as to sin)**. This sounds like what 'follow' means.

The word 'FOLLOW' is *akoloutheo* (ak-ol-oo-theh'-o), which means: **to be in the same way with, to accompany, to reach**. It also verifies a SPIRITUAL DEATH. The BAPTISM OF DEATH leads to the NEWNESS OF LIFE. 'LIFE' here is the same as Jesus used in Matthew 7:14 which is **spiritual life**. This passage verifies that BEFORE spiritual life is given, first must come this BAPTISM OF DEATH. It is NOT physical death he speaks of here, but a likeness or RESEMBLANCE to Christ's death and resurrection. The word for 'resurrection' is *anastasis*, and it means either: **a literal resurrection from the dead, or recovery of spiritual truth.**

The "spiritual truth" is the *agape* love of God that is in Christ, because Jesus said He was the truth. It is what Adam and Eve lost at the fall. It is the New Covenant, which Christ brought to RECOVER mankind. Notice that OUR old (spiritual) man is to be CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST. The ONLY way to be CRUCIFIED is upon a CROSS. This totally verifies what Jesus Christ was referring to when He

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

commanded us to pick up OUR CROSS and FOLLOW Him. It is interesting to note that Adam and Eve spiritually died due to a curse of a tree. Jesus spiritually died due to a curse of being hung on a tree. And we are to spiritually be put to death by the Word of God, and the Holy Bible is printed upon paper that is made of a tree!

"CRUCIFIED" is *stauroo* (stow-ro'-o), meaning: **to impale on the cross, figuratively to extinguish or subdue passion or selfishness.** The word "impale" is interesting and means: **to fasten to, to make helpless as if pierced through.** Webster's 1828 dictionary defines "IMPALE" as: **to put to death. IF WE** have to be PUT TO DEATH WITH CHRIST, then why is it being taught that we DO NOT HAVE TO DIE? That Christ died INSTEAD OF US. Where is the scripture that supports a no death WAY that leads to LIFE? This is what spiritual crucifixion is. God will fasten the obedient believer upon a spiritual cross as if he were pierced through with spikes. You cannot go back to the world, because you KNOW that ETERNAL DAMNATION would be CERTAIN. Neither can you GO FORWARD because regeneration is done by an act of GOD when and where He decides. You feel alone, suspended in time of suffering, helplessness and shame. You cry: my God why have you forgotten me? You quietly sit in the valley of the shadow of death ...while all is silent.

OUR CRUCIFICTION IS NOT 'BY' CHRIST, BUT WITH CHRIST. WE ARE AT THE TOTAL MERCY OF GOD, AND IF YOU OBEY CHRIST, THEN GOD WILL HUMBLE YOU, AND BRING YOU DOWN TO DESTRUCTION AND RUIN. TO WAIT IN THE PIT OF DESPAIR, IN THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH TILL HE WHO BIDS YOU COMES AND LIFTS YOU UP.

**"AND YE ARE COMPLETE [PERFECT] IN HIM,**  
*which is the head of all principality and power:"*

**"IN whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, IN PUTTING OFF THE BODY OF THE SINS OF THE FLESH BY THE CIRCUMCISION OF CHRIST:"**

**"BURIED WITH HIM IN BAPTISM, WHEREIN ALSO YE ARE RISEN WITH HIM THROUGH THE FAITH OF THE OPERATION OF GOD,**  
*who hath raised him from the dead."*

**"AND YOU, BEING DEAD IN YOUR SINS AND THE UNCIRCUMCISION OF YOUR FLESH, HATH HE QUICKENED TOGETHER WITH HIM, HAVING FORGIVEN YOU ALL TRESPASSES;"**

***"Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us,***  
**AND TOOK IT OUT OF THE WAY, nailing it to HIS cross;"**  
***(Colossians 2:10-14)***

## Christ the Redeemer

The word "COMPLETE" is *pleroo*, which in this context means: **to be perfect**. We saw where Jesus commanded us to be perfect as God is perfect which, (as confirmed here), can only be accomplished by union IN Christ. Paul again refers to our "BODY OF SIN", which must be CRUCIFIED. He then directly relates this to the BAPTISM of DEATH. This is NOT something WE DO instantly through our carnal mind, but a slow supernatural OPERATION that God does "IF" we humble ourselves to His chastisement of the NARROW WAY. Paul also relates spiritual death to being QUICKENED WITH CHRIST. The word "QUICKENED" here verifies the mystery. It is Strong's number G4806 (*suzoopoieo*), which means: **to reanimate conjointly with, quicken together with**. It is the compound word of G4862, which means **UNION**; and G2227, which is: **to GIVE LIFE**. This is the exact opposite of what 'crucified' meant which is SEPARATION and DEATH. Can we not begin to understand this mystery? LIFE is IN the SON, (1 John 5:11-12) and we **must be IN** spiritual UNION with Christ to HAVE the ETERNAL LIFE. We must experientially be 'put to death' with Christ on our own cross, in order to be 'quicken' together with Him. Notice that His work of the cross took the application of the ordinances of the LAW and took them "OUT OF THE WAY", thus satisfying the atonement part of redemption.

That is why the WAY OF THE CROSS is not a "holiness walk" or keeping laws after you are saved as some fundamentalist Christians claim. That is **opposite** of the true narrow way. True salvation is only found at THE END of the narrow way, not before. **The way of the cross IS NOT for cleaning-up the flesh by obeying God's laws in order to be saved. That is NOT what the Scriptures are teaching us.** The WAY OF THE CROSS is the result of OBEDIANCE to Christ which is to **SEEK FIRST** the kingdom of God and His righteousness (*agape* love). This search is the main priority above all else. The object of a search is not to seek to be more "Christ-like", the object of any search is to FIND SOMETHING THAT IS LOST OR HIDDEN FROM VIEW. What is HIDDEN from view is the divine love spirit Adam and Eve LOST at the FALL. There are many more references which prove that spiritual DEATH MUST come BEFORE spiritual LIFE.

### **"I AM CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST:**

***nevertheless I live; YET NOT I, BUT CHRIST LIVETH IN ME:***

***and the life which I now live in the flesh***

***I LIVE BY THE FAITH OF THE SON OF GOD,***

***who [AGAPAO] loved me, and gave himself FOR ME."***

***(Galations 2:20)***

The apostle Paul testifies that he also was **CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST**. Paul did not say Christ was crucified **instead of** him. Paul obviously picked up his own cross and walked the narrow way as commanded. The Greek for "CRUCIFIED WITH" is *sustauroo*, the same used for the two malefactors who were LITERALLY crucified with Christ, who represented the two covenants.

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

Notice how Paul relates his crucifixion to Christ living **IN** Him, and how he lives by the faith **OF** Christ, not faith **IN** Christ. Paul had undergone the BAPTISM INTO DEATH and was QUICKENED with Christ. **Notice how Paul brings together his cross and Christ's sacrifice, a direct contradiction to modern Christian teaching.**

There is no doubt that the will of Christ is that we take up our own spiritual cross and be CRUCIFIED with Him. The word 'CRUCIFY' means: **to extinguish or subdue passion or selfishness**. These come by the conditional *philos* loves of man's fallen spirit. If we ourselves attempt to extinguish our passion and selfishness by self denial, even in the name of Christ, would that not be a "work" of righteousness of the flesh, a legalism? Thereby could we boast of our own merit, that is IF we had the sheer willpower to accomplish such a feat. But if this extinguishing is performed by a **supernatural force** stronger than ourselves that leads to an experiential spiritual DEATH followed by the experiential revelation of LIFE, then it would indeed be an OPERATION of God, not of ourselves. Something He does to us, for we do not have access or CONTROL over the "hidden man" of our own spirit, (Jer 17:9; Eccl 8:8).

The word "SUBDUE" from the definition of crucified is another important clue. Webster defines it as: **1. to conquer and bring into subjection. 2. to overpower by superior force; OVERCOME. 3. to bring under mental or emotional control, as by persuasion or intimidation; render submissive. 4. to repress (feelings, impulses, etc.).** We could say: "to overcome through the superior force of the Spirit and Word of God". Now compare what subdue means to the New Testament application of "OVERCOMING":

**"FOR WHATSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD**

**OVERCOMETH THE WORLD:**

**and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith."**

**(1 John 5:4)**

The word "OVERCOMETH" is *nikao*. It was Christ's command to each of the seven Churches of Revelation, and is defined: **to subdue, to conquer, overcome, prevail, get the victory**. What is it we are to OVERCOME? THE WORLD. The human *philos* LOVE and lusts of the world; our passions and selfish desires that comes from our own self-centered love-starved spirit. The body of sin, the WORLD that had been set in our heart, (Eccl 3:11) How do we overcome?

By being CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST. How are we crucified? By taking up OUR cross and DYING a spiritual death by the faith OF Christ and the OPERATION of God. How will God do that? By our OBEDIENCE to Christ of entering the strait gate and narrow way, THE WHOLE HEART SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH OF GOD.



## Christ the Redeemer

The word "BORN" in 1 John 5:4 is *gennao*, which means: **to regenerate**, which is another term of SPIRITUAL REBIRTH. John directly relates OVERCOMING to being BORN AGAIN.

**"FOR IF YE LIVE AFTER THE FLESH, YE SHALL DIE:  
BUT IF YE THROUGH THE SPIRIT  
DO MORTIFY THE DEEDS OF THE BODY,  
YE SHALL LIVE."**

**"For as many as ARE LED BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD,  
THEY ARE THE SONS OF GOD."**  
(Romans 8:13-14)

The word "MORTIFY" is *thanatoo*, which means: **to kill, become dead, to be put to death**. This is obviously not where a person resists sin by their own strength and merit, but is done supernaturally through the power of God. This verifies that it is an OPERATION OF GOD accomplished by the POWER OF GOD. The CONDITION here is HAVING the Spirit, which in this reference relates to AFTER regeneration. For they "ARE LED", and 'ARE' the SONS OF GOD. You must be BORN of GOD to be a SON of God. You must have God's *agape* love bestowed upon you (1 Jn 3:1) to be ONE with the Father and the Son, (Jn 17:26).

**"That I may KNOW him, and the power of his resurrection, and the  
FELLOWSHIP OF HIS SUFFERINGS, BEING MADE  
CONFORMABLE UNTO HIS DEATH;"**  
(Philippians 3:10)

Paul speaks here as one unregenerate. We saw this verse before, but we want to re-emphasize that "CONFORMABLE" is the KEY word here. It is Strong's number G4832, *summorphos*, which means: **similar, conformed to, fashioned like unto**. Random House defines "conformable" as: **1. corresponding in form, nature, or character; similar; 2. compliant, obedient, submissive**. And what is Paul saying we are to be made to conform to? **CHRIST'S DEATH ON THE CROSS**. It is the BAPTISM OF DEATH. As Jesus suffered both a SPIRITUAL and PHYSICAL DEATH on His cross, we are to similarly **suffer and experience death** on OUR OWN SPIRITUAL CROSS because it is through our spirit that our deeds are to be MORTIFIED. **WE ARE TO BE CONFORMED TO HIS DEATH, SO THAT WE WILL BE TRANSFORMED TO HIS RESURRECTION**. To pass from an experiential DEATH to an experiential LIFE. Notice again that it is something DONE TO US, not something we do to ourselves.

**"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God,  
THAT YE PRESENT YOUR BODIES  
A LIVING SACRIFICE,  
HOLY, ACCEPTABLE UNTO GOD,**

## PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb

### **WHICH IS YOUR REASONABLE SERVICE."**

**(Romans 12:1)**

Now to finalize what the cross means to us. The word 'LIVING' is *zao* which is LIFE or QUICKENED, which means spiritually born again. This is supported by the condition here of being 'HOLY' and acceptable to God, who is only the God of the LIVING, (Mat 22:32) which is also the Greek word *zao*.

Note who are to be the SACRIFICE. Since it was well proven that Christ was the SUBSTITUTE FOR the atoning sacrifice, how is it now WE are to also be a sacrifice? Remember it was stated earlier that **THE CROSS BECAME THE ALTAR OF THE NEW COVENANT**. Jesus commanded US to pick up our own CROSS and DIE FOR HIS SAKE AND THE SAKE OF THE GOSPELS, (Mark 8:34-35). This is interesting that the Gospels are included here because the term "reasonable service" in the Greek is *logikos latreia* which means: **divine service of the Word**. How are we to sacrifice ourselves?

### **"THE SACRIFICES OF GOD**

**ARE A BROKEN SPIRIT: A BROKEN AND A CONTRITE HEART,**

**O God, thou wilt not despise."**

**(Psalms 51:17)**

This verse confirms we are to present ourselves a "living sacrifice". We are to deny ourselves and pick-up OUR CROSS and FOLLOW Christ, to follow His steps, (1Pet 2:21). To not only BELIEVE on Him but also SUFFER for His sake, (Phil 1:28-29). The word 'SACRIFICE' here is H2077 *zebach* (zeh'-bakh), and essentially means: **slaughter the flesh of an animal by a sacrifice (the victim or the act)**. Figuratively we could say: to destroy the nature of the flesh. The word 'BROKEN' is *shabar* (shaw-bar'), meaning: **to break down, in pieces; broken hearted, bring to the birth, crush, destroy**. Is it not interesting that this definition means "TO BRING TO THE BIRTH"? The other definitions are the same for the Hebrew meaning to 'CIRCUMCISE' the heart, (Deut 30:6). The word 'CONTRITE' is H1794 *dakah* (daw-kaw'), which is: **to collapse (phys. or mentally); break, crouch - humbled**. Again, this is the Baptism into death that Jesus said WE indeed shall be baptized with, (Mat 20:22-23). This is THE DEATH OF THE CROSS. Do you understand what is expected of every obedient Christian of the Lord Jesus Christ?

**CHRIST JESUS TOOK UP HIS CROSS AND DIED FOR US. BOTH AS THE SUBSTITUTE FOR THE ATONING LAMB AND AS A NEAR KINSMAN TO LEGALLY PURCHASE US OUT OF THE BONDAGE OF SIN AND DEATH. HE SACRIFICED HIMSELF FOR OUR SAKE. THEN AS LORD HE REQUIRES THAT WE PICK UP OUR CROSS AND ALSO DIE AS A SACRIFICE FOR HIS SAKE. FROM THE FALL IN EDEN, WE LOST THE DIVINE LOVE OF GOD IN OUR HEARTS AND IN ITS PLACE GOD SET THE WORLD IN OUR HEARTS, (Eccl 3:11). JESUS OVERCAME THE WORLD THROUGH HIS CROSS, (John 16:33) AND WAS RAISED TO ETERNAL LIFE. ALL WHO ARE IN-TRUTH BORN AGAIN HAVE ALSO OVERCOME THE WORLD THROUGH THEIR CROSS, (1 John 5:4-5).**

## Christ the Redeemer

### 9. REVELATION OF CHRIST.

***"But WE SPEAK THE WISDOM OF GOD IN A MYSTERY,  
even the HIDDEN WISDOM,  
which God ordained before the world unto our glory:"  
(1 Cor 2:7)***

The point of all this is that we are SAVED by the GRACE of God, but His Grace is well HIDDEN. The narrow WAY OF THE CROSS is the SEARCH for the TRUTH, that is, Jesus Christ because he IS the GRACE and WISDOM of God.

The word "HIDDEN" is *apokrupto*, which means: **to conceal away fully, to keep secret, to hide**. God predetermined before the world was, to CONCEAL His wisdom. The world itself CANNOT KNOW the wisdom of God. God has to supernaturally REVEAL it to His chosen ones, (Job 28: 12-23; Micah 7:9). It is the "crown of glory" to those who possess this wisdom of God, but to all others it remains A MYSTERY. They are not able to UNDERSTAND IT unless God gives them the **REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST**. That is why the false teachers say this is all some form of 'spiritualism'. They have NEVER been obedient to the commands of Christ, therefore Jesus has NEVER manifested Himself to them. So, they must fabricate WISDOM of WORDS to justify themselves to be Sons of God, but instead God calls them ILLEGITIMATE SONS.

***"Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober,  
AND HOPE TO THE END FOR  
THE GRACE THAT IS TO BE BROUGHT UNTO YOU  
AT THE REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST;"  
(1 Peter 1:13)***

And what is the MYSTERY? The bestowment of God's divine AGAPE love (1 John 3:1), the **essence** of the Son, "**CHRIST IN YOU**". Since we are told we are saved BY GRACE, and GRACE is BROUGHT to us when Christ MANIFESTS himself to us, then until that manifestation, we ARE NOT SAVED AND REMAIN IN OUR SINS. The false Christian teachers turn this all around and say there is NO REVELATION other than the Bible. The word "REVELATION" is *apokalupsis* (ap-ok-al'-oop-sis), which means: **a disclosure, appearing, coming, lighten, manifestation, be revealed, revelation**. Peter is not speaking of the second coming of Christ to deliver and rule earth. That is proven in John's Gospel:

***"HE THAT HATH MY COMMANDMENTS, AND KEEPETH THEM,  
HE IT IS THAT LOVETH ME:  
AND HE THAT LOVETH ME SHALL BE LOVED OF MY FATHER, AND I WILL LOVE HIM,  
AND WILL MANIFEST MYSELF TO HIM."***

***"JUDAS SAITH UNTO HIM, NOT ISCARIOT, LORD, HOW IS IT THAT THOU WILT  
MANIFEST THYSELF UNTO US,***

**PART 1 - Jesus the Lamb**

**AND NOT UNTO THE WORLD?"**

**"JESUS ANSWERED AND SAID UNTO HIM,  
IF A MAN LOVE ME, HE WILL KEEP MY WORDS:  
AND MY FATHER WILL LOVE HIM,  
AND WE WILL COME UNTO HIM,  
AND MAKE OUR ABODE WITH HIM." (John 14:21-23)**

Read this passage very carefully for you will have a problem explaining away what Jesus literally says here. As Jesus reveals, there are only FEW Christians WHO HAVE THIS TESTIMONY. The word "MANIFEST" is *emphanizo* (em-fan-id'-zo), which is defined: **to exhibit in person, to disclose, to appear, to declare plainly.** What does Jesus MANIFEST? HIS OWN SELF, HIS SPIRITUAL ESSENCE. Who does Jesus MANIFEST HIMSELF TO? THOSE WHO OBEY HIS COMMANDS, His sayings. Verse 22 verifies this is NOT a reference to the second advent, and Jesus defines the manifestation is for only those who OBEY His words. This disciple named Judas did not misinterpret what Jesus said, he only did not understand how Jesus will APPEAR to the believer, and NOT TO THE WORLD. This proves absolutely that there is an experiential REVELATION of Jesus Christ to the believer when true salvation takes place.

**THERE IS NO RELIGION OR BELIEF ON EARTH THAT HAS THIS TESTIMONY OTHER THAN TRUE BIBLICAL CHRISTIANITY. THE INSTANT 'FAITH' GOSPEL OF MODERN SECULAR CHRISTIANITY HAS NO SUCH TESTIMONY. IN FACT, THEY DENY IT. THEY HAVE SPREAD THEIR PHONEY LOOK-A-LIKE GOSPEL OVER ALL THE PLANET AND HAVE GROWN RICH DOING IT. WE ARE TO OBEY THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. WE ARE TO HUMBLE OURSELVES TO THE CHASTISEMENT THAT GOD GIVES TO EVERY SOUL THAT COMES TO HIM, WHO CALLS UPON HIM IN TRUTH, (Heb 12:5-11; Isa 45:18). WE ARE TO EXPERIENCE SPIRITUAL DEATH AND MEET THE LIVING CHRIST WHEN HE MANIFESTS HIMSELF TO US. THAT IS WHAT THE GOSPELS TEACH, THAT IS WHAT THE CROSS, THE POWER OF GOD DOES. ANYONE WHO HAS A FORM OF GODLINESS BUT CONTRADICTS THE POWER OF THE CROSS, FROM SUCH TURN AWAY. THEY HAVE THE SPIRIT OF ERROR AND LEAD MANY UNWARY AND DISOBEDIENT CHRISTIANS TO ETERNAL RUIN.**

**Who HIS OWN SELF BARE OUR SINS in his own body ON THE TREE,  
that WE, BEING DEAD TO SINS,  
SHOULD LIVE UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS:  
*by whose stripes ye were healed."*  
(1 Pet 2:24)**

A person cannot be "DEAD TO SINS" except they first DIE TO SIN. They cannot die to sin except God first BRING THEM DOWN INTO SPIRITUAL DEATH. God will not bring them down except they first BELIEVE CHRIST, HUMBLE THEMSELVES

## Christ the Redeemer

and OBEY HIS COMMANDS: "TAKE UP THE CROSS AND FOLLOW ME" so that they may FIND LIFE. **It is ALL CONDITIONAL, and "BELIEVING IN JESUS" includes OBEDIENCE to what He told us to do.** Notice what is actually being said here because it brings together all that has been shown thus far. Jesus Christ took upon Himself OUR SINS. He was the SACRIFICE for OUR ATONEMENT.

It was no coincidence that He was **hung upon a tree**, so that He would undergo the same spiritual CURSE as Adam, (Gal 3:13; Deut 21:23; Acts 5:30, 10:39) and experience spiritual death for our sake, (Mat 27:46). This is covered deeply in *Part 2*. But God raised him up from death because of His righteousness, (divine AGAPE LOVE of God that was in Christ), which made him free from the law of sin and death. Therefore, "IF" we OVERCOME the world by humbling ourselves to God's WAY and enter into UNION with Christ, THEN we live unto the righteousness that is IN Christ NOT our own. THEN, we are covered by HIS BLOOD and have forgiveness of sins. NOT BEFORE.

**"LOOKING UNTO JESUS  
THE AUTHOR AND FINISHER OF OUR FAITH;  
WHO FOR THE JOY THAT WAS SET BEFORE HIM  
ENDURED THE CROSS,**

**DESPISING THE SHAME,  
AND IS SET DOWN AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE THRONE OF GOD."  
(Hebrews 12:2)**

The word "AUTHOR" simply means: **the chief leader; creator and originator.** The Greek for "FINISHER" is *teleiotes* (tel-i-ot'-ace), which means: **completeness, perfection.** Again, perfection is IN His *agape* essence. The truth of this is very simple: we are complete and made perfect "IF" we are IN Christ, but IF we are not in genuine union with Christ, we are incomplete and NOT made perfect. We are NOT covered by His blood nor have forgiveness of sins. We are NOT born again or will go to heaven, we are NOT justified or sanctified. We will ABIDE ALONE FOREVER. So pursue Jesus and DO what He said TO DO. For He AUTHORED the WAY OF THE CROSS. **The WAY of self-denial, suffering, judgment, death, and eternal life.** Jesus did not originate an instant "sinners prayer" type of a fabricated rebirth of the doctrines of men. Jesus TOLD US the WAY to salvation was NARROW and it takes GREAT PATIENCE.

**"AND YE SHALL SEEK ME, AND FIND ME, WHEN YE SHALL SEARCH FOR ME  
WITH ALL YOUR HEART."  
(Jeremiah 29:13)**

~End of Part 1~

## PART 2 - *Jesus the Near Kinsman*

### SECTIONS:

1. THE ORIENTAL LAW OF KINSHIP (pg 70)
2. THE FALL (pg 72)
3. GOD'S PLAN (pg 91)
4. JESUS, THE NEAR KINSMAN (pg 94)
5. THE PURCHASE (pg 100)
6. THE RECKONING (pg 110)
7. ROYAL PRIESTHOOD (pg 117)
8. DEFEAT OF PRINCIPALITIES (pg 120)
9. REDEEMING THE PURCHASE (pg 128)
10. REDEMPTION DAY (pg 140)

Christians typically think of redemption in relation to Christ's atonement which was covered extensively in *Part 1*. Here we are going to study another equally important facet of redemption that has nothing to do with His forgiveness for sins. We found that *Atonement* comes from the Old Testament law of sacrifice through which Jesus shed His blood as *payment* for the forgiveness of the sins of the world. Atonement was an essential work of Christ upon the cross, making reconciliation possible between God and man. However, redemption in the literal sense is where Christ gave His life in order to *purchase* the human race out of bondage. In fact, both Christ's *payment* AND *purchase* were strict legal fulfillments of Old Testament law. The *kinsman-redeemer* purchase of Christ is a major part of a little known law of the Jews called the "*Oriental law of kinship*". Here, 'ORIENTAL' simply means EASTERN, and it is through this law that salvation was made legally possible.

Jesus Christ said He came NOT to destroy the law, but to fulfill it, (Mat 5:17). Therefore, every human soul that is not in-truth **IN** Christ remains under the laws of God, and by that law no one is justified, (Rom 3:20). We will find in this study that both the Old Testament and the New are 'legally' binding contracts that God made with Israel. When Christ appeared, He brought God's new covenant being sent to the House of Israel, (Mat 15:24). The 'Church' was born out of this new covenant, (Heb 12:22-24). Therefore, Christians are the 'STRANGERS' who become part of Israel, (Lev 19:34; Isa 14:1), and subject to ALL conditions of the new covenant, (Romans 11). This is a MYSTERY of the Gospel. Other than the delay of Christ's return to allow the Gentiles to "come in", there is no "separate program" for the Church vs. Israel. ALL of Christ's doctrine applies to the WHOLE House of Israel, both Jew and Gentile. The House of Jacob (old covenant Jews) rejected the initial offer, but will be re-grafted in AFTER Christ returns, beginning the *time of restitution* of all things. All of this is done in accordance to God's law and covenants. God operates within His own laws which is why He is considered a just God and not a respecter of persons.

## Christ the Redeemer

We are now going to see how this works in relation to redemption through Jesus Christ from a legal standpoint of God's law and covenants. It is hoped you will discover here some 'riches' of the Word of God.

### 1. The Oriental Law of Kinship.

We are first going to explore what the "*Oriental law of kinship*" is, and how it is the foundation and legal basis of redemption and the doctrine of *reconciliation*.

**Think not  
that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets:  
I AM NOT COME TO DESTROY,  
BUT TO FULFIL.  
(Matthew 5:17)**

Many Christians obviously have a real problem with what Jesus said here. Many believe that because Christ came and fulfilled the law, that all laws of God are now effectively CANCELLED. But that is not true, and we see here that Jesus even WARNS of this. We will find that Jesus also worked within the confines of God's law with good reason. The word 'FULFILL' is very important. Strong's Greek definition is number G4137, *pleroo* (play-ro'-o), which in context of the law means: **to satisfy an obligation, to execute or perfect prophecy, to accomplish something in accordance with law.** These definitions describe exactly the mission of Christ. Understanding the *Oriental Law of Kinship* is critical in understanding how Christ became both mediator of the new covenant and beneficiary of the human race. The absolute necessity of why we MUST OBEY what Christ Jesus told us to do. His fulfillment of this law is WHY salvation can ONLY be possible through Him.

*Strong's* Hebrew and Greek definitions gives us an overall scope of redemption and the "*Oriental law of kinship*":

"REDEEM", [Hebrew] H1350. *ga'al*, gaw-al', to redeem (**according to the Oriental law of kinship**), i.e. **to be the next of kin** (and as such to **buy back a relative's property, marry his widow**, etc.): **to deliver**, (do, perform the part of near, next) kinsfolk (-man), purchase, ransom, redeemer, revenger.

"REDEMPTION", [Hebrew] H1353. *geullah*, gheh-ool-law'; fem. pass. part. of H1350; **redemption including the right and the object; by implying relationship; kindred, redeem, redemption, right.**

"REDEEMED", [Greek] G59. *agorazo*, ag-or-ad'-zo; from G58; **properly: to go to market, i.e. by implying to purchase; specifically to redeem, to buy.**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

REDEMPTION, [Webster-1828]: *n.* 1. **REPURCHASE** of captured goods or prisoners; ransom. 2. **Deliverence from bondage, distress, or from liability to any evil or forfeiture**, 6. **In theology...redemption through his blood.**

The whole of Christ's redemptive work is based upon two primary laws: (1) The *law of sacrifice* for atonement of sins; and (2) The *Oriental Law of Kinship*. The number 'two' in Scripture represents a witness, a testimony; and Christ the second member of the Godhead, and the 'seed' of the woman, (Gen 3:15).

Often it is important to see how certain words are used in scripture. The following chart shows how the Greek word for 'redeemed' actually means a PURCHASE (transfer of ownership), and not an 'atonement' PAYMENT. These two aspects are generally perceived as the same, but they are not. The Greek word '*agorazo*' is used in the New Testament **31** times in **31** verses. In every application it denotes: **a purchased possession, a legal transfer of ownership**. In Biblical numerology, '31' is the number of the root word for God- "E1".

<u>REDEMPTION BY PURCHASE, N.T. USE OF G59. 'Agorazo'</u>	<u>REF.</u>
1. "kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field...a man <i>buyeth</i> that field."	Mat 13:44
2. "Who...found one pearl of great price...and <i>bought it</i> ."	Mat 13:46
3. "they took counsel, and <i>bought</i> ...potter's field"	Mat 27:7
4. "For ye are <i>bought</i> with a price"	1 Cor 6:20
5. "Ye are <i>bought</i> with a price; be not ye the servants of men"	1 Cor 7:23
6. "there were false prophets...denying the Lord that <i>bought</i> them"	2 Pet 2:1
7. "they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy...and hast <i>redeemed us to God by thy blood</i> "	Rev 5:9
8. "the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were <i>redeemed</i> from the earth."	Rev 14:3
9. "These were <i>redeemed</i> from among men, <i>being</i> the firstfruits"	Rev 14:4
10. "And that no man might <i>buy</i> or sell, save he that had the mark"	Rev 13:17

The basic concept of the *Oriental law of kinship* is simple and consists of three major applications in relation to redemption. They include:

**(1) to redeem a near kinsman out of bondage;**

**(2) to redeem a kinsman's land rights;**

**(3) marrying the widow of a deceased kinsman.**

The first two fall under what is known as *Kinsman-Redeemer* law, found in Leviticus chapter 25. The Book of Ruth chapter 4, shows the third aspect of the law in action, with Boaz and Ruth symbolizing Christ and His church, which is a mystery, (Eph 5:30-32).



## Christ the Redeemer

The *Oriental law of kinship* is virtually unknown in Christian theology. In fact, if you ask any Christian preacher or teacher what is *kinsman-redeemer* law, you will most likely receive a puzzled look, or at best a response that is in relation to Christ's atonement. As stated earlier, the *kinsman-redeemer* purchase has an entirely different application than Christ's atonement. Atonement is a **PAYMENT for sin**, and redemption is a **PURCHASE of rights**. Both were required for salvation through Christ. ***Through kinsman-redeemer law, Christ purchased legal ownership of both the world and all its inhabitants. More importantly, it is by this law that all of mankind must ultimately answer to Christ, whether in this world or the one to come.*** We will find it is how Jesus legally became both LORD AND SAVIOUR.

For EVERY knee shall bow and confess that JESUS IS LORD, (Phil 2:10-11). Since God The Father created all things through the Spirit of Christ (John 1:3,10), then why would He have to purchase rights to it? We saw that Webster's 1828 Dictionary defines redemption as a **re-purchase**; God created all things THROUGH His Son, (Eph 3:9), and thus Christ had dominion over man as the legal heir, but when man FELL from the Grace of God, dominion was legally transferred to Satan by default. The 'transfer' of those rights is what we will explore next.

## 2. The Fall.

The FALL of mankind is an extensive doctrine of itself, but to fully comprehend what redemption means to us, we must at least understand the basics of what the FALL really was. Also, how can anyone understand the concept of salvation without understanding what we are to be saved from? How did Adam and Eve place us under the LEGAL DOMINION to the spirit of Satan and eternal separation from our Creator? What does the term 'FALL' actually mean?

*"Therefore as by*  
**THE OFFENCE OF ONE**  
**JUDGMENT CAME UPON ALL MEN**  
**TO CONDEMNATION;**  
*even so by the righteousness of one*  
**the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life."**

**"FOR AS BY ONE MAN'S DISOBEDIENCE**  
**MANY WERE MADE SINNERS,**  
**so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."**  
*(Romans 5:18-19)*

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

SIN entered into the world through Adam's transgression, therefore prior to this, death existed only in theory. Greek for "OFFENCE" is *paraptoma* (par-ap'-to-mah), which means: **unintentional error or willful transgression: TO FALL, fault, offence, sin, or trespass.** The word 'CONDEMNATION' means: **to sentence, a verdict of judgment unto eternal ruin.** We will find this is a legal judgment because of Adam's DISOBEDIENCE to God's command which resulted in the condemnation of the entire human race forever. Since the "free gift" comes through the righteousness of Christ unto LIFE, then obviously without that justification is the condition of DEATH.

***"And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire.  
THIS IS THE SECOND DEATH."***

***"And whosoever was not found written in the book of life  
WAS CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE."***  
***(Revelation 20:14-15)***

Death essentially means: **a separation.** There is a PHYSICAL death and a SPIRITUAL death. When our bodies cease to function, then we are separated from the material world. However, God is the Father of spirits (Heb 12:9), and it is the spirit-soul that hangs in the balance with Him. The [spiritual] FIRST death was the separation of mankind from his Creator by the fall of Adam.

All of mankind enters the physical world by physical birth, but with a 'DEAD' spirit, meaning a spirit that is cut-off from our Creator. Christ came to redeem man out of this condition by RE-BIRTH of the SPIRIT OF LIFE. **IF** a person does not possess this spiritual LIFE when they leave this physical world, then they will be judged to enter a SECOND [spiritual] DEATH: THE LAKE OF FIRE WHICH IS FINAL JUDGMENT, an eternal separation from the spiritual world. Many believe that Hell or "the lake of fire" are not literal places. Do a Scriptural study on 'HELL' and you will find the Bible presents it as a literal place that God is able to send both body and soul into, (Nu 16:31-33; Mat 10:28). Hell is located in the center of the Earth, (Isa 14:9; Ezek 26:20-21; Amos 9:2; Mat 12:40). A place of darkness, (Jude 1:6,13) and torments, (Luke 16:23, 28). The lake of fire is also a place of eternal torment, (Rev 14:11, 20:10). And every human soul, regardless of what they believe, shall (according to Scripture) die and stand in judgment (Heb 9:27). Everyone will confess that Jesus Christ IS LORD, (Phil 2:9-11). Then comes the final judgment of the dead, (Mat 25:41; Rev 20:11-15).

***"Not a novice, [NEW CHRISTIAN CONVERT]  
lest being lifted up with pride he fall into  
THE CONDEMNATION OF THE DEVIL."***  
***(1 Timothy 3:6)***

## Christ the Redeemer

Here we find that mankind fell into the same condemnation as Satan because of PRIDE. This verifies what 'FALL' means. The word 'NOVICE' is *neophutos* (neh-of-oo-tos), which means: **newly planted, i.e. a young convert.** This reveals there is a difference between *conversion* to Christianity vs. *regeneration* (born again) in the spirit of Christ. We will return to the FALL aspect later, but first we should understand the condition of Adam and Eve BEFORE their FALL. This takes us into the *doctrine of Creation* and the *doctrine of Salvation*.

**"And God [the Elohiym] said,  
LET US MAKE MAN IN OUR IMAGE,  
AFTER OUR LIKENESS:  
and let them have dominion  
*over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle,  
and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing  
that creepeth upon the earth."***

***"So God created man IN HIS OWN IMAGE,  
IN THE IMAGE OF GOD CREATED HE HIM;  
male and female created he them." (Genesis 1:26-27)***

The word 'GOD' in the Genesis creation account is '*elohiym* (el-o-heem)', which is the plural of '*elowahh*, **the Deity God.** God created all things by Jesus Christ, (Eph 3:9; Jn 1:1-3). Could this be why Genesis says "OUR IMAGE"? Mankind was made in the image of God the Father and His Son (pre-carnate Christ). This takes us into another Biblical concept: *the doctrine of God* to find out what the image of God and Christ is.

IMAGE OF GOD	IMAGE OF CHRIST
God is a spirit (Jn 4:24)	Jesus is the spirit of God (Jn 10:30)
God is light (1 Jn 1:5)	Jesus is light (Jn 12:35)
God is <i>agape</i> love (1 Jn 4:8)	Jesus is <i>agape</i> love (Rom 8:39)
God is life (Jn 5:26)	Jesus is life (Jn 5:11-12)
God is truth (Deu 32:4)	Jesus is truth (Jn 14:6-7)

We see from this comparison that both God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ are ONE in the DIVINE SPIRIT of AGAPE. The Greek words AGAPE (ag-ah'-pay) or AGAPAO, (Strong's numbers G25 and G26 respectively), are used for the Divine love of God in the New Testament. In Biblical Greek there are at least **31** types of *PHILOS* loves of man. Words such as 'light', 'life', and 'truth', in relation to God and Christ, are all metaphors for God's *agape* love TYPE.

***[AGAPE] "LOVE WORKETH NO ILL TO HIS NEIGHBOUR: THEREFORE  
[AGAPE] LOVE IS THE FULFILLING OF THE LAW."  
(Romans 13:10)***

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**"A NEW COMMANDMENT I GIVE UNTO YOU,  
THAT YE [AGAPAO] LOVE ONE ANOTHER;  
as I have [agapao] loved you,  
that ye also [agapao] love one another."  
(John 13:34)**

The word 'LAW' here is *nomos* (nom'-os), and refers to the laws of Moses as well as the Gospel law of Christ. We see that it is the AGAPE love spirit of God that fulfills the law and the ONLY thing that fulfills it. Mankind does not possess this type of love, Adam and Eve lost it at their fall. Christ was also made in the image of God, (2 Cor 4:4; Col 1:15), and we are to be conformed into His image, (Rom 8:29). The word 'REGENERATION' (born again), literally means: **return to genesis**. We are to return to the image of the FIRSTBORN, (Heb 12:23). Christ was the firstborn of the creation of God, (Gen 1:1; Jn 1:1; Rev 3:14), Adam was the firstborn of mankind, and Jesus was the (regenerated) firstborn of the Church, (Col 1:18). All of mankind is born with the fallen spirit of Adam, a problem of the HEART out of which originates all the sins and ills of man.

**"THE HEART IS DECEITFUL ABOVE ALL THINGS,  
AND DESPERATELY WICKED: WHO CAN KNOW IT?"  
(Jeremiah 17:9)**

**"FOR OUT OF THE HEART PROCEED  
EVIL THOUGHTS, MURDERS, ADULTERIES, FORNICATIONS,  
THEFTS, FALSE WITNESS, BLASPHEMIES:"  
(Matthew 15:19)**

GOD only knows how wicked man's heart really is. Jesus came to testify that our deeds are evil, (Jn 3:19-21), and that our basic problem is in our HEART. The word 'HEART' is used mostly in Scripture as a metaphor rather than the organ that pumps blood. The Greek is *kardia* (kar-dee'-ah), which is defined: **figuratively the thoughts and feelings of the mind**. But it goes much deeper:

**"BUT LET IT BE THE HIDDEN MAN OF THE HEART,  
in that which is not corruptible,  
EVEN THE ORNAMENT OF A MEEK AND QUIET SPIRIT,  
which is in the sight of God of great price."  
(1 Peter 3:4)**

**"BUT HE IS A JEW, WHICH IS ONE INWARDLY;  
AND CIRCUMCISION IS THAT OF THE HEART, IN THE SPIRIT,**

## Christ the Redeemer

**AND NOT IN THE LETTER [LAW OF CIRCUMCISION];  
whose praise is not of men, but of God."  
(Romans 2:29)**

The HEART the Bible speaks of is our HIDDEN SPIRIT MAN. That is why no person knows how desperate they really are because it is concealed to all but God. That is why Jesus said we MUST be spiritually born again. The fall CORRUPTED the *spirit of life* within mankind and placed him in the mode of transgression against God, the *spirit of death*. The separation from the LIFE that is in Christ.

**"Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed;  
AND MAKE YOU A NEW HEART AND A NEW SPIRIT:  
FOR WHY WILL YE DIE, O HOUSE OF ISRAEL?"  
(Ezekiel 18:31)**

This refers to the NEW SPIRITUAL HEART aspect of the New Covenant. God said the heart of His people is sick and weak, (Ezek 16:30). We cannot cast away our transgression without this NEW heart. Unless we possess it, we face the SECOND DEATH. Therefore, He made a New Covenant of a new heart, a new spirit by which Jesus Christ is mediator, (Heb 12:24). Again, a covenant IS a legal agreement enforced as divine law. We find this covenant was promised in the *Torah*, the Old Testament books of the law. In fact, Hebrew for 'LAW' is *towrah* (*torah*), which comes from the word *yarah* (yaw-raw'), which means: **to point out, to teach**. So what is this NEW HEART all about?

**"AND THOU SHALT LOVE THE LORD THY GOD WITH ALL THINE HEART,  
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."**

**"And these words, which I command thee this day,  
SHALL BE IN THINE HEART:"  
(Deuteronomy 6:5-6)**

**"And the LORD thy God will CIRCUMCISE THINE HEART,  
and the heart of thy seed,  
TO LOVE  
the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul,  
THAT THOU MAYEST LIVE."  
(Deuteronomy 30:6)**

The term "YOU SHALL" is a legal term used in various contracts even today. We saw previously where Jesus said He brought a NEW COMMANDMENT TO AGAPE LOVE as He *agape* loved. Here we see the original promise. We would not be commanded TO LOVE, unless we do not love.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Our concept of love is not the same as God's love. Hebrew for 'CIRCUMCISE' is *muwl* (mool), which figuratively means: **cut in pieces, destroy, must needs [required]**. It is where the DEAD love of the human spirit-heart must be CUT AWAY and DESTROYED so it may be replaced with a NEW HEART of God's Spirit of Life. It is an OPERATION that has to be performed by God Himself, **IF** we obey Christ's commands to humble ourselves to this corrective spiritual surgery, (Ps 28:5; Col 2:12). Notice even in Old Testament law it is LOVE that gives LIFE. Look at these verses carefully. Note that we CAN NOT LOVE GOD WITH ALL OUR HEART with the heart we are born with, because it not the TYPE OF LOVE God requires. The first man and first woman were originally created with this type of love spirit which was the image of God.

**"AND GAVEST A BODY UNTO ADAM WITHOUT SOUL,  
WHICH WAS THE WORKMANSHIP OF THINE HANDS,  
AND DIDST BREATHE INTO HIM THE BREATH OF LIFE,  
AND HE WAS MADE LIVING BEFORE THEE."**

**"AND THOU LEDDEST HIM INTO PARADISE,  
WHICH THY RIGHT HAND HAD PLANTED,  
before ever the earth came forward."  
(II Esdras 3:5-6, 1611 King James Version)**

When Adam was first formed OUT OF THE EARTH, God animated his body by breathing His 'breath' into him, (Gen 2:7; Job 10:8-12). Hebrew for 'BREATH' is *neshamah* (nesh-aw-maw'), which is: **vital breath (as in the air we breathe)**, but this was God's breath. Jesus performed a similar transfer of the Holy Spirit by breathing on His disciples, (Jn 20:22). Since God is the Spirit of pure *agape* love, and in Him is LIFE, then God breathed into Adam the **Spirit of Life** as well as the 'breath' that animates the body, (Rev 11:11). This of itself became established law:

**"THERE IS THEREFORE NOW NO CONDEMNATION  
TO THEM WHICH ARE IN CHRIST JESUS,  
WHO WALK NOT AFTER THE FLESH, BUT AFTER THE SPIRIT."**

**"FOR THE LAW OF THE SPIRIT OF LIFE  
IN CHRIST JESUS HATH MADE ME FREE FROM  
THE LAW OF SIN AND DEATH."  
(Romans 8:1-2)**

Do you begin see what the Word of God is all about? We see two opposing laws and forces at work in relation to that which is SPIRIT. This is a very critical Scriptural fact to establish in view of redemption.

## Christ the Redeemer

This confirms that the image of God and of Christ is this **Spirit of Life**, which is the Spirit of divine *agape*. This also confirms that all mankind is naturally under the law of the **spirit of death**.

Greek for 'FREE' here is *eleutheroo* (el-yoo-ther-o'-o), which means: **to liberate, i.e. to exempt from moral or mortal liability**. It comes from *eleutheros*, which is: **unrestrained to go at pleasure, i.e. as a citizen not a slave whether freeborn or manumitted**. Therefore, the transition between these two laws is the redemption that is found only IN Christ Jesus. Both Adam and Christ were FREEBORN. The difference being Christ was freeborn under *Torah* law (Gal 4:4), but Adam was created before the law was imputed, (Rom 5:12-14).

**"WE KNOW THAT WE HAVE PASSED FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE,  
BECAUSE  
WE [AGAPAO] LOVE THE BRETHREN.  
HE THAT [AGAPAO] LOVETH NOT HIS BROTHER ABIDETH IN DEATH."  
(1 JOHN 3:14)**

**"HE THAT SAITH HE IS IN THE LIGHT, AND HATETH HIS BROTHER,  
IS IN DARKNESS EVEN UNTIL NOW."  
(1 JOHN 2:9)**

**"THEN SPAKE JESUS AGAIN UNTO THEM, SAYING,  
I AM THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD: HE THAT FOLLOWETH ME  
SHALL NOT WALK IN DARKNESS,  
BUT SHALL HAVE THE LIGHT OF LIFE."  
(John 8:12)**

Notice that THE ONLY difference between the spiritual condition of death vs. life and darkness vs. light is thing called '*agape*' love.

**THE ONLY ISSUE BETWEEN GOD AND MAN IS A LOVE-TYPE OF SPIRIT CALLED 'AGAPE' IN THE GREEK. THAT IS WHY BEING "A GOOD PERSON" OR A CHRISTIAN DEDICATED TO THE WORKS OF CHRIST HAS NO VALUE AT JUDGMENT, (See Mat 7:21-24).**

**THE NEW COMMANDMENT OF CHRIST CAN ONLY BE FULFILLED BY THE AGAPE LOVE THAT IS IN HIM. JESUS ATONED FOR THE 'SINS' OF THE FLESH TO SATISFY THAT PART OF THE LAW, WHICH IS NOT THE ISSUE HERE. WHAT IS AT STAKE IS WHETHER A PERSON HAS HAD THE AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED UPON THEM BY GOD (1 John 3:1) AT THE REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST (1 Peter 1:13). IT IS ONLY THEN, WHEN WE WALK IN THE LIGHT OF GOD'S AGAPE LOVE, THAT THE BLOOD ATONEMENT OF CHRIST CLEANSSES US FROM ALL SIN, (1 John 1:7).**

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

So it is established that man FELL into separation from the law of the Spirit of Life in God and Christ to the law of sin and death. We will later look at a few aspects of HOW the fall occurred via the Tree of Knowledge, but first we need to briefly look at the CAUSE that is behind all of this –SATAN'S FALL.

**"THOU ART THE ANOINTED CHERUB THAT COVERETH;  
AND I HAVE SET THEE SO: THOU WAST UPON THE HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD;  
THOU HAST WALKED UP AND DOWN  
IN THE MIDST OF THE STONES OF FIRE."  
[THE THRONE IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN]**

**"THOU WAST PERFECT  
IN THY WAYS FROM THE DAY THAT THOU WAST CREATED,  
TILL INIQUITY WAS FOUND IN THEE."**

**"BY THE MULTITUDE OF THY MERCHANDISE THEY HAVE FILLED THE MIDST  
OF THEE WITH VIOLENCE, AND THOU HAST SINNED:  
THEREFORE  
I WILL CAST THEE AS PROFANE OUT OF THE MOUNTAIN OF GOD:  
AND I WILL DESTROY THEE, O COVERING CHERUB,  
FROM THE MIDST OF THE STONES OF FIRE."  
[CAST DOWN FROM THE THRONE IN EDEN]  
(Ezekiel 28:14-16)**

The King of Tyrus in Ezekiel 28 is accepted to represent Satan, in fact both names 'Tyrus' and 'Satan' mean: "adversary". He was one of the angelic Cherubim, God's highest ranking arch angels, a celestial king. He was an 'anointed' cherub that had been in Eden, the garden of God, (Ezk 28:13). He was created by God for the specific purpose of overseeing and protecting paradise. Hebrew for 'covereth' in verse 14 is H5526 *cakak*, which means: "to protect by concealing". The word is used in Scripture to describe the Cherubim or veil that covers the mercy seat of God's Ark of the Covenant, (Ex 25:20; 37:9; 40:3, 21). Enoch said the mountain of God is in paradise, and is comprised of seven mountains that forms a 'throne', and these mountains are covered with stones that glitters like fire, (Enoch chapter 24). He said this is where Christ shall sit after he descends to redeem the Earth. The point here is that he was made 'perfect'. Perfect in Scripture means: "a sound whole, complete; without blemish, undefiled in integrity and truth". But he transgressed God because of the pride of his beauty.

Because of this, God cast him out of the paradise of Eden and shall be destroyed at his appointed time, (Rev 20:10).

**"And the seventy [disciples] returned again with joy, saying, Lord,  
EVEN THE DEVILS ARE SUBJECT UNTO US THROUGH THY NAME."**



## Christ the Redeemer

**"AND HE SAID UNTO THEM,  
I BEHELD SATAN AS LIGHTNING  
FALL FROM HEAVEN."**

*(Luke 10:17-18)*

Most all Bible readers agree that the serpent who tempted Eve in Eden was Satan, (Rev 20:2). We realize that at that time (and since), he became an adversary of God, out to destroy the works of God, (Isa 54:16). Satan was anointed and perfect but also fell into condemnation, (1 Tim 3:6). Both Scriptural evidence and logic suggests that Satan's fall occurred at the time of Adam and Eve's fall, when all three were cursed and thrown out of Eden, and we see here that Jesus literally witnessed this event. God replaced Satan's appointed station with other Cherubim, (Gen 3:24); otherwise why would a cursed creature be allowed in paradise?

One basis for the so called "gap theory" of a pre-Genesis civilization led by 'Lucifer' is to agree with the theories of Darwinism that the Earth is billions of years old. By such theories, MYSTERY creeps into the Church. ***Both Satan and man caused a BREACH into God's perfect creation that allowed transgression to enter the entire kosmos; and one-third of the angels of the heavens followed after him, (Rev 12:4, 6:13).*** The stakes were high. Satan knew the outcome and power he could gain by corrupting God's creation of mankind, the spiritual image of the living God. This is all about mis-directed pride, greed, and lust. The very basic evils that has kept the world corrupt and in chaos ever since. God made man to be lord of Earth, but the serpent was subtle. In the pride of his beauty, he wanted to be worshipped as GOD. He deceived Eve to get it, (1 Tim 2:14); he attempted to bribe Jesus to get it, (Luk 4:5-8); and he is deceiving the entire world to get it, (Rev 13:4).

**"AND THE DEVIL SAID UNTO HIM [JESUS],  
ALL THIS POWER WILL I GIVE THEE, AND THE GLORY OF THEM:  
FOR THAT IS DELIVERED UNTO ME; AND TO WHOMSOEVER I WILL I GIVE IT."**

**"IF THOU THEREFORE WILT WORSHIP ME,  
ALL SHALL BE THINE."**

*(Luke 4:4-7)*

**MAN WAS ORIGINALLY CREATED TO HAVE ETERNAL ACCESS TO THE GARDEN OF EDEN TO KEEP AND DRESS IT, AND HAVE DOMINION OVER EARTH. SATAN WAS MADE PERFECT AND HIS STATION IN HEAVEN WAS PROTECTOR OF EDEN AND THE HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD, WITH ITS THRONE OF SEVEN MOUNTAINS AND STONES OF FIRE. UPON WHICH CHRIST IS TO SIT AFTER HE DECENDS TO REDEEM THE EARTH, (Book of Enoch, Ch. 24).**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**BOTH SATAN AND MAN FELL FROM THE GRACE OF GOD AND WAS EXPELLED OUT OF THE GARDEN DOWN TO EARTH. PARADISE MUST HAVE BEEN THE ORIGINAL DOMAIN OF SATAN, BUT HIS PRIDE WANTED MANKIND TO SERVE HIM AS LORD (Mat 4:8-10), THUS CAUSING THE FALL INTO CONDEMNATION. JESUS SAID HIS KINGDOM WAS NOT OF THIS WORLD, (Jn 18:36); AND TOLD US TO PRAY THAT GOD'S KINGDOM WILL BE IN EARTH AS IT IS IN HEAVEN, (Mat 6:9-10). TO SEEK FIRST FOR THE KINGDOM OF GOD, FOR IT IS WELL HIDDEN FROM THE EYES OF MAN, (Mat 6:33).**

**SINCE EARTH IS NOT THE KINGDOM OF GOD, THEN WHO'S KINGDOM IS IT? SATAN SAID IT WAS HIS AND THAT IT WAS DELIVERED TO HIM, (Luke 4:6). NOW HE TREADS UPON EARTH AND ITS ATMOSPHERE INSTEAD OF EDEN, (Job 1:7; Eph 2:2). THEREFORE THE EARTH IS THE KINGDOM OF SATAN AND ALL UNREGENERATE SOULS OF ALL NATIONS ARE HIS LEGAL BONDSLAVES WHO SERVE HIM THROUGH THE SPIRIT OF MAMMON (LOVE OF MONEY), BECAUSE SATAN CONTROLS THE SPIRIT OF MAMMON, (Lu 16:13).**

But how would the "Old Serpent" accomplish this devious feat? How would he cause the spirit in man's clay body to rise up in pride against the most High God?

**"And the LORD God COMMANDED THE MAN, saying,  
OF EVERY TREE OF THE GARDEN THOU MAYEST FREELY EAT:"**

**"BUT OF THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL,  
THOU SHALT NOT EAT OF IT:  
FOR IN THE DAY THAT THOU EATEST THEREOF  
THOU SHALT SURELY DIE."**  
(Genesis 2:16-17)

God's commands ALWAYS have consequence and enforced judgment, (often death) if disobeyed. This is the only negative requirement God placed upon Adam and Eve. But what was the reason for this tree in the first place? Since God foreknew all of this would happen and established a detailed plan to correct it, (Bible prophecy), then why did He do this and allow His creation to suffer for many centuries? We can only speculate that **it established free will choice of obedience or disobedience to God, and respect or disrespect for all He created.** It establishes and proves that God created ALL SPIRITS with FREE WILL.

**"And the serpent said unto the woman,  
YE SHALL NOT SURELY DIE:"**

## Christ the Redeemer

**"FOR GOD DOTH KNOW THAT IN THE DAY YE EAT THEREOF,  
THEN YOUR EYES SHALL BE OPENED,  
AND YE SHALL BE AS GODS,  
KNOWING GOOD AND EVIL."**

**(Genesis 3:4-5)**

The serpent's objective was simple: to change man's central awareness away from serving God, to serving him. Instead of their existence being governed by God's Spirit, they would become as 'GODS' thus becoming SELF-RULED under legal bondage to Satan. We should seriously consider this. The FIRST commandment is "***Thou shalt have no other gods before me***", (Ex 20:3). Jesus said men are *gods*, (Jn 10:33-35; Ps 82:6-7). And to be eternally separated from the LIFE that is in their Creator is DEATH, and DEATH is the last enemy of Christ to be destroyed, (1 Cor 15:26).

***Therefore DEATH in any form shall be destroyed and cast into the lake of fire***, (Rev 20:14). This is why NO ONE can keep the law apart from the *agape* love of God that is IN Christ because it is LIFE.

The serpent LIED which caused the eternal death of billions. Perhaps that is why Jesus said Satan was the father of lies and "a murderer from the beginning", (Jn 8:44). Hebrew for 'EYES' is H5869, '*ayin* (ah'-yin), and is: **an eye** (singular); and figuratively it represents knowledge that comes from spiritual central awareness. Before, they knew only good because only God is good, (Mat 19:17).

***"And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food,  
and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired  
TO MAKE ONE WISE,  
she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat,  
and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat."***

**"AND THE EYES OF THEM BOTH WERE OPENED,  
AND THEY KNEW THAT THEY WERE NAKED;  
and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons."**  
**(Genesis 3:6-7)**

Eve perceived everything about that tree was GOOD because of her innocent 'amoral' nature. Before this they were not ashamed to be naked, (Gen 2:25). But their fall changed them from amorality to morality. Webster's definitions will give us a better understanding of this:

ASHAMED, [Webster-1828], 2. **Confused by a consciousness of guilt or of inferiority;**  
by **the mortification of pride**; by failure or disappointment. From SHAME: A painful

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

sensation excited by consciousness of guilt by the exposure of that which nature or modesty prompts us to conceal.

MORTIFICATION, [*Random House-1999*], {Late Latin: *mortific/re* to put to death};  
1. to humiliate or shame, as by injury to one's pride or self-respect.

AMORAL, [*Webster's 7<sup>th</sup> Collegiate Dictionary*], neither moral nor immoral; OUTSIDE THE SPHERE TO WHICH MORAL JUDGMENTS APPLY.

MORAL, [*Webster-1828*], Relating to the practice, manners or conduct of men as social beings in relation to each other, and with reference to right and wrong. The word *moral* is applicable to actions that are good or evil, virtuous or vicious, and has reference to the law of God as the standard by which their character is to be determined.

The word 'amoral' is relatively a new term of the English language, but it is synonymous with "moral sense", which is considered the 'natural' sense or perception of what is right or wrong. The so-called morality of mankind is actually a confusing delusion created by the fall in Eden.

Human morality is the knowledge of good and evil, being self-governed by each individual to whom God will hold responsible. It is actually the fallen sin nature of Adam. Adam was originally created beyond morality. No matter how much people with their varied governments and religions try to eliminate the God of the Bible, the natural sense of what is right or wrong in accordance to His law is universal and forever established in the hearts of all. Our concept of what is 'good' is only a faint resemblance of what is good in view of the Lord. This truth is seen in children.

***"Moreover your little ones, which ye said should be a prey,  
AND YOUR CHILDREN, which in that day  
HAD NO KNOWLEDGE BETWEEN GOOD AND EVIL,  
they shall go in thither, and unto them will I give it,  
and they shall possess it."  
(Deuteronomy 1:39)***

This confirms what is meant by the "KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL". Children are *amoral* creatures up to a certain age. The Jews believe that at age 12 a child passes from the state of innocence and begins their life of **moral judgment**. The number 12 in Scripture represents Divine Government. There were 12 patriarchs and 12 apostles who JUDGE the 12 tribes of Israel, (Mat 19:28). The next year is age 13, which is known as the number of rebellion and anarchy, and generally begins the rebellious teenage years. Coincidence? Notice it is those who become as little children that enter into God's promised land, (Mat 18:3).

## Christ the Redeemer

We need to now turn our attention to that TREE itself. Like many other Biblical concepts, people allow opinions and assumptions to form beliefs. The opinions of what the *Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil* was and HOW it caused the fall vary. Was it a literal tree located in a literal place called Eden or Paradise? Again, the Bible just states it as a matter of fact, so we should allow the text to take us where it leads. It is this tree that the serpent used to cause a BREACH in the fabric of time. The *Book of Enoch* also declares the Tree of Knowledge was literal:

***"Their fragrance [TREES OF EDEN] was agreeable and powerful, and their appearance both varied and elegant.  
THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE ALSO WAS THERE, OF WHICH IF ANY ONE EATS,  
HE BECOMES ENDOWED WITH GREAT WISDOM."***

***"IT WAS LIKE A SPECIES OF THE TAMARIND TREE, BEARING FRUIT WHICH RESEMBLED GRAPES EXTREMELY FINE;  
and its fragrance extended to a considerable distance. I exclaimed:  
HOW BEAUTIFUL IS THE TREE, AND HOW DELIGHTFUL IS ITS APPEARANCE!"***

***"Then holy Raphael, an angel who was with me, answered and said:  
THIS IS THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE,  
OF WHICH THY ANCIENT FATHER AND THY AGED MOTHER ATE,  
WHO WERE BEFORE THEE; AND WHO, OBTAINING KNOWLEDGE,  
THEIR EYES BEING OPENED, AND KNOWING THEMSELVES TO BE  
NAKED, WERE EXPELLED FROM THE GARDEN."  
(Book of Enoch 31:3-5)***

We will find TWO basic aspects of the fall that was caused by the Tree of Knowledge: (1) spiritual death, and (2) physical death. Was there a literal fruit that contained some special agent that effected a change in human awareness? God told Adam and Eve in the day they eat of that tree they shall surely die. And we saw where they did undergo a change in awareness as soon as they ate of the tree. We will also find their physical bodies changed that day from immortality to mortality, which we will later see. But did spiritual death result from digesting a physical fruit? The answer to that question is found on the CROSS OF CHRIST. And since this is a major legal issue, we find it also in the law and other Scripture.

***"FOR AS MANY AS ARE OF THE WORKS OF THE LAW  
ARE UNDER THE CURSE:  
FOR IT IS WRITTEN, CURSED IS EVERY ONE THAT CONTINUETH NOT IN ALL  
THINGS WHICH ARE WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF THE LAW  
TO DO THEM."***

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**"CHRIST HATH REDEEMED US FROM THE CURSE OF THE LAW,  
BEING MADE A CURSE FOR US:**

*for it is written,*

**CURSED IS EVERY ONE  
THAT HANGETH ON A TREE:"**

*(Galations 3:10, 13)*

God's *torah* laws are the result of the curse, and the transgression against God's command not to eat of the Tree of Knowledge caused the curse. There is debate whether Jesus underwent SPIRITUAL DEATH upon the cross as Adam did by the Tree of Knowledge. Greek for 'TREE' is *xulon* (xoo'-lon), and means: a **timber, tree or other wooden article [INCLUDING A WOODEN CROSS]**. The word 'CURSED' is *kataraoimai* (kat-ar-ah'-om-ahee), which means: **to execrate; to doom.**

The primary sense of 'EXECRATE' means: **to separate** [Webster-1828], and again, separation is death. There is a specific legal reason Jesus had to die upon a wooden cross. This curse was required for payment, also in accordance to law. We will explore this in more detail in *Section 5* of this study.

*"And say thou unto them, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel;*

**CURSED BE THE MAN  
THAT OBEYETH NOT THE WORDS OF THIS COVENANT,"**  
*(Jeremiah 11:3)*

Notice what causes a curse –disobedience. And the curse causes separation from God which is death. This covenant is God's law, and we saw earlier that ONLY AGAPE LOVE fulfills the law, (Rom 13:10), and *agape* must be bestowed upon the human soul by God, (1 Jn 3:1), which is the new commandment Christ brought.

*"Then shall he [JESUS] say also unto them on the left hand,  
DEPART FROM ME,*

**YE CURSED,  
INTO EVERLASTING FIRE,  
PREPARED FOR THE DEVIL AND HIS ANGELS:"**  
*(Mat 25:41)*

## Christ the Redeemer

Adam, Eve, and every generation since is under the CURSE. The ONLY way man can escape the curse of sin and death, is through a redeemer who is willing and able to redeem us, hence Christ Jesus. All are born into this world are under the curse. Those who remain UNREGENERATED, remain cursed; and those who ARE (in truth) REGENERATED are extricated from the curse.

But what about physical death? Did digesting the fruit cause Adam and Eve to be immortal? Obviously Adam and Eve continued to physically live after eating that fruit, that is if you define a day only in Earth time of 24 hours.

*"And at the end of the nineteenth jubilee, in the seventh week, in the sixth year thereof, **Adam died**, and all of his sons buried him in the land of the creation of Adam, and he was the first to be buried in the earth, **AND HE LACKED SEVENTY YEARS OF ONE THOUSAND YEARS; FOR ONE THOUSAND YEARS ARE LIKE ONE DAY IN THE TESTIMONY OF HEAVEN,** and therefore it was written **CONCERNING THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE: On the day on which ye shall eat thereof ye shall die.**"*

***"AND FOR THIS REASON HE DID NOT COMPLETE THE YEARS OF THIS DAY; FOR IN IT HE DIED."***  
*(Book of Jubilees 5:28-29)*

The *Book of Jubilees* may not be "the inspired Word", but it does reveal how the early Christian Church viewed Scripture. This is part of the **thousand year per day doctrine** that is found among early Church literature. The Apostle Peter concurs, (2 Pet 3:8). Here we find that God's time is the TESTIMONY OF HEAVEN. Paradise (Garden of Eden) was and is in the third heaven, (1 Cor 12:2-4). Some claim it was first on Earth, then moved down into Hell, and moved again into the heavens. Does God not know what to do with it?

It is interesting that Adam lived 930 years and fell short of God's time of a thousand year day by **70** years, the average time of a generation in Israel, (Ps 90:10). Therefore Adam and Eve physically died before the thousand year DAY expired, establishing the lie of the serpent: "**Ye shall not surely die**". If they would have physically died as soon as they ate that fruit, then mankind would have become extinct before any off-spring was born. Hence no redeemer to restore the universe after the FALL of Satan and his angels.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Now we have come to the last major question of the fall: HOW did Satan gain legal ownership of mankind and dominion of Earth? We will find this answer also on the CROSS OF CHRIST.

*"Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more;*

**DEATH HATH NO MORE  
DOMINION OVER HIM."**

*(Romans 6:9)*

Greek for 'DOMINION' here is *kurieuo* (koo-ree-yoo'-o), which means: **to rule, have dominion over, be lord of, exercise lordship over**. Since Death had NO MORE rule over Christ, then obviously at some point it did, even if it was only briefly due to the curse of the tree. Remember this is all a legal issue in view of the law. When Adam and Eve entered the spiritual CURSE that changed them from the Spirit of Life to the spirit of SIN AND DEATH, at that point they were separated from God and ENTERED THE DOMAIN OF DEATH in accordance to law.

*"Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood,  
he also himself likewise took part of the same;*

**THAT THROUGH DEATH HE MIGHT DESTROY**

**HIM THAT HAD THE POWER OF DEATH,  
THAT IS, THE DEVIL;"**

**"AND DELIVER THEM WHO THROUGH FEAR OF DEATH WERE**

**ALL THEIR LIFETIME SUBJECT TO BONDAGE."**

*(Hebrews 2:14-15)*

Greek for 'POWER' is *kratos* (krat'-os), which is defined: **dominion**. The word 'DOMINION' means: **right of governing and controlling; people, lands or domains subject to sovereignty or control**. Since mankind entered the dominion of death at the FALL, and death is under Satan's power, then guess what!

Noah Webster's 1828 dictionary defines "BONDAGE" as: **Slavery or involuntary servitude; captivity; imprisonment; restraint of a person's liberty by compulsion. In scripture, spiritual subjection to sin and corrupt passions, or to the yoke of the ceremonial law; servile fear**. In other words, the bondage of man's fear of death and his compulsive spiritual nature to sin.

**ADAM AND EVE SOLD THEMSELVES INTO THIS BONDAGE BY AGREEING WITH SATAN TO TRANSGRESS THE COMMAND OF GOD BY EATING OF THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE. IT WAS A LEGAL TRANSFER OF SERVITUDE.**



## Christ the Redeemer

It is interesting to note that after Adam and Eve's FALL, God had to expel them from Eden so that they would not eat of the Tree of Life and live forever in their FALLEN sin nature, (Gen 3:22-23). Satan had to be banished also and God replaced Satan's responsibility with other Cherubim to guard Paradise, (Gen 3:24).

**"TO OPEN THEIR EYES, AND TO TURN THEM FROM DARKNESS TO LIGHT,  
AND FROM THE POWER OF SATAN UNTO GOD,  
THAT THEY MAY RECEIVE FORGIVENESS OF SINS, AND INHERITANCE  
AMONG THEM WHICH ARE SANCTIFIED BY FAITH THAT IS IN ME."  
(Acts 26:18)**

Note what has to happen before being turned from the POWER of Satan unto God. Their 'EYES' (center of awareness) must be re-OPENED to the pre-FALL spiritual nature. How is that done? Only by the revelation of Jesus Christ, (1 Pet 1:13). Note that forgiveness of sins (atonement) ONLY comes AFTER being released from the power of Satan. Greek for 'POWER' here is *exousia* (ex-oo-see'-ah), and means: **privilege, subjective force, capacity, competency, freedom, a token of control, delegated influence: authority, jurisdiction, power, right, strength.** The Holy Bible declares that Satan gained legal power and control over man, and according to God's prophetic law, man must labor in this bondage for 6000 years before being legally released. This will be proven later. We have now come full circle to God's plan for redeeming both man and His creation.

***"And the seventh angel sounded;  
and there were great voices in heaven, saying,  
THE KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD  
ARE BECOME THE KINGDOMS OF OUR LORD,  
AND OF HIS CHRIST; AND HE SHALL REIGN FOR EVER AND EVER."  
(Revelation 11:15)***

**"AND THERE SHALL BE NO MORE CURSE:  
BUT THE THRONE OF GOD AND OF THE LAMB SHALL BE IN IT;  
AND HIS SERVANTS SHALL SERVE HIM:"  
(Revelation 22:3)**

We will later find that Christ purchased the rights over man and the world, but has not yet redeemed that right. God's redemption of His people from Egypt was a portrait of Christ's redemption of His church. A word study on "EGYPTIANS" shows that in essence it means: **a confining adversary.** Pharaoh and his army represents Satan and his army of angels and demons. Spiritual 'Egypt' is the kingdom of darkness and bondage. In fact, 10 times God referred to Egypt as the "HOUSE OF BONDAGE".

## PART 2 - *Jesus the Near Kinsman*

God had to 'urge' the Israelites out of Egypt by a variety of strange miracles. When they crossed the Red Sea, it symbolized the strait gate entrance to the wilderness of the narrow way. It was the way of testing, **the way of law and great judgments** upon Israel. The old generation had to DIE in the wilderness, but the "NEW BIRTH" entered into the promised land. The Jews could not deliver themselves from Pharaoh, therefore God raised up Moses and brought redemption of their bondage through him, as Christ has for the new covenant.

***"STAND FAST THEREFORE IN THE LIBERTY WHEREWITH  
CHRIST HATH MADE US FREE,  
AND BE NOT ENTANGLED AGAIN  
WITH THE YOKE OF BONDAGE."  
(Galatians 5:1)***

The word "FREE" is interesting. It is *eleutheroo* [el-yoo-ther-o'-o], which means: **to liberate, i.e. figuratively to exempt from moral or mortal liability, to deliver, make free.** Or we could say SAVED. The MORAL and MORTAL LIABILITY comes from THE FALL AT EDEN. Satan said Adam and Eve would become as 'gods', to KNOW good and evil. God confirmed that. Therefore, since Adam and Eve became as gods, (i.e. to make moral judgments based upon their own central awareness of good and evil), which then made them and their offspring LIABLE to God for their judgments. The word "liable" means: **legal responsibility.** The "yoke" of their bondage became the curse of the law from which Christ came to reverse legal liability, and execute the plan of God. And what is the objective of God's plan?

***"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life."***

***"For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world;  
BUT THAT THE WORLD THROUGH HIM MIGHT BE SAVED."  
(John 3:16-17)***

John 3:16 is usually the first verse of Scripture every new Christian learns, but only FEW really understand. Of course the word for 'LOVED' here is *agapao*. Greek for 'WORLD' here is ***kosmos*** (kos'-mos), which means: **orderly arrangement.** Webster's 1828 dictionary defines it:

1. **The universe; the whole system of creation.** And Random House defines 'COSMOS': [1] **the world or universe regarded as an orderly, harmonious system;** [2] **a complete, orderly, harmonious system;** [3] **order; harmony.** Does this not reflect intelligent design?

## Christ the Redeemer

Anyone but God rejecters, (Ps 14:1) can look around at all that can be seen, with the most powerful microscopes to the largest telescopes, that the Earth and the universe has pattern, laws, and order.

The transgression of Satan brought anarchy, chaos, and the *torah* law. God's perfect creation had been compromised, BREACHED. In fact, Scripture reveals this was all fore known by God, therefore He devised a very cunning plan to repair this BREACH.

**"AND THEY THAT SHALL BE OF THEE [THE REGENERATED]  
SHALL BUILD THE OLD WASTE PLACES:  
THOU SHALT RAISE UP THE FOUNDATIONS OF MANY GENERATIONS;  
AND THOU SHALT BE CALLED,  
THE REPAIRER OF THE BREACH,  
THE RESTORER OF PATHS TO DWELL IN."  
(Isaiah 58:12)**

God planned to restore the *kosmos* through Himself, by begetting his own Son to repurchase the rights and restore harmonious order and dominion to the *kosmos*. The Hebrew people were created to bring forth the MESSIAH Christ child via the woman (Israel) in order to provide redemption for those who will become KINGS and PRIESTS. **The work of the cross was not only to redeem fallen man, but to repair the entire universe.**

Now that we have somewhat of an understanding of these things, let's review John 3:16 and John 8:23 and see how it takes on a whole new light by using the original Greek words for LOVE and WORLD:

**FOR GOD SO AGAPAO THE KOSMOS,  
THAT HE GAVE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON,  
THAT WHOSEVER BELIEVETH IN HIM SHOULD NOT PERISH,  
BUT HAVE EVERLASTING LIFE.  
[THE SPIRIT OF LIFE THAT IS IN CHRIST]  
FOR GOD SENT NOT HIS SON INTO THE *KOSMOS*  
TO CONDEMN THE *KOSMOS*; BUT THAT  
THE *KOSMOS* THROUGH HIM MIGHT BE SAVED.  
[REPAIR THE BREACH CAUSED BY THE FALL]  
(John 3:16)**

**And he [JESUS] said unto them,  
YE ARE FROM BENEATH; I AM FROM ABOVE:  
YE ARE OF THIS *KOSMOS*; I AM NOT OF THIS *KOSMOS*.  
(John 8:23)**

Believe it or not, *the doctrine of creation* reveals that our universe is enclosed in a glass-like sphere, and God's throne is OUTSIDE this sphere far above

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

all heavens, (Ps 8:1; 113:4; 148:4; Rev 15:2). The Heaven that was created in the first day, is above the heaven of the second day, (Gen 1:1-8). Therefore, it was literal when Christ said He was not of this *kosmos* but above it, (Ephesians 4:9-10).

**THE FALL OF MAN CHANGED EVERYTHING, IT FOREVER CHANGED THE COURSE OF MAN, EARTH, TIME, AND THE HEAVENS. OUTSIDE OF CREATION ITSELF, IT WAS THE MOST GREATEST SINGLE EVENT IN HISTORY AND THE BIBLE. EVEN THE BIBLE ITSELF AND THE VIRGIN BIRTH OF CHRIST CAME AS THE RESULT OF THIS SEEMILY SIMPLE ACT OF EATING A PIECE OF FRUIT! YET, IT IS SCARCELY RECOGNIZED OR UNDERSTOOD FOR THE IMPACT IT MADE UPON THE UNIVERSE AND MANY, MANY GENERATIONS.**

### **3. God's Plan**

How was God going to turn man's hopeless situation around? The scriptures declare we all are procreated from the fallen image our father Adam. Mankind does not realize he is in a fallen state because that is all he knows. The Holy Bible is a testimony of mankind's condition and how we are to return to the nature and spiritual essence of what God created man to be through the baptism of spiritual *regeneration*, (Titus 3:5). Do you see? That is "**why we are here**", it is our purpose and priority in life to literally FIND our Creator. Religions and Science are looking in all the wrong places. The power and dominion that Adam once had was demonstrated by Christ. Jesus had power over the earth, the wind, the sea, animals, sickness, and demons. Jesus came as the '*Mashiyach*' or '*Christos*', the "**anointed one**" to restore what was lost, back to the genesis creation via a NEW COVENANT. To bring us out from the dominion and bondage of Satan back to God.

But how would God legally justify guilty men and women from under the curse to being FREE and saved from the judgment of death and Hell? For Satan and his accusing angels would certainly protest upon legal grounds. For man it is impossible, but with God, it was as simple as placing a 'provision' in His law which allows mankind to escape eternal death. It is called: the law of *Kinsman Redeemer*.

**"IF THY BROTHER BE WAXEN POOR,  
AND HATH SOLD AWAY SOME OF HIS POSSESSION,  
AND IF ANY OF HIS KIN COME TO REDEEM IT, THEN  
SHALL HE REDEEM THAT WHICH HIS BROTHER SOLD."  
(LEVITICUS 25:25)**

## Christ the Redeemer

The word for "REDEEM" in this verse is *ga'al* (gaw-al'), which is: **to redeem according to the Oriental law of kinship, i.e. to be the next of kin and as such to buy back a relative's deliverance.** When God decreed this law, He made redemption legally possible. The phrase "SOLD AWAY" is *makar* (maw-kar') which means: **to sell literally into slavery, or figuratively to surrender or sell self.** We saw how Adam and Eve disobeyed the command of God and sold themselves into the bondage of sin and death because of its curse.

Scripture revealed how man separated himself from the 'life' of God and entered into the kingdom of death which is under Satan's power. Man was free under the divine love of God, but now lives in the bondage of the curse of the law. ***He is a slave to his own self-centered loves of his flesh, he is a slave to that which he knows.***

We saw where the fall at Eden was both literal and permanent; being evident by the conditions of the world. But the plan was perfect. God would enter into the human race under the law (1 Tim 3:16), thereby reconciling man to Himself. By this plan He would defeat Satan's power of death, atone for man's sins, repurchase ownership of the human race, regain man's rights over planet earth, and permanently establish His government. All done legally through His own ancient decreed laws. The next verses of scripture are most likely the most important statements of the Bible relating to our redemption:

***"BUT WHEN THE FULNESS OF THE TIME WAS COME,  
GOD SENT FORTH HIS SON,  
MADE OF A WOMAN, MADE UNDER THE LAW,"***

***"TO REDEEM THEM THAT WERE UNDER THE LAW,  
THAT WE MIGHT RECEIVE THE ADOPTION OF SONS."***  
***(GALATIANS 4:4-5)***

The word for "REDEEM" here is *exagorazo* (ex-ag-or-ad'-zo); which means: **to buy up, to ransom, to rescue from loss.** The word *Exagorazo* is from two words: *ek*, which **denotes origin**; and *agorazo*, which we already know means: **a legal transfer of ownership.** This is telling us that **Christ's birth by woman initialized a legal transfer of ownership!** Isn't that what the scripture literally says, Christ was "made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law"?

This passage of scripture validates the application of the law of *Kinsman-Redeemer*, and reveals a reason for the virgin birth. This refers to a purchase of legal rights of ownership, which is not atonement, and in of itself gives us HOPE.

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

Animals used in sacrifices were not born UNDER the law, but were accepted in accordance to law as payments to God for the forgiveness of sins. The scriptures prove that Jesus also fulfilled the laws of atonement as the substitute for the sacrifice, *NOT AS SUBSTITUTE FOR THE SINNER AS MODERN CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE TEACHES*. This was covered extensively in *Part 1*. There is only ONE reason why Christ had to be born of a woman and under the law. To be a **NEAR KINSMAN** of the human race in compliance to God's law.

**"AND [GOD] HATH MADE OF ONE BLOOD  
ALL NATIONS OF MEN  
FOR TO DWELL ON ALL THE FACE OF THE EARTH,  
AND HATH DETERMINED THE TIMES BEFORE APPOINTED,  
AND THE BOUNDS OF THEIR HABITATION;"**  
(ACTS 17:26)

**"AND THEY SUNG A NEW SONG, SAYING, THOU ART WORTHY TO TAKE THE  
BOOK, AND TO OPEN THE SEALS THEREOF: FOR THOU WAST SLAIN,  
AND HAST REDEEMED US TO GOD  
BY THY BLOOD OUT OF EVERY KINDRED,  
AND TONGUE, AND PEOPLE, AND NATION;"**  
(Revelation 5:9)

This is how Christ was able to die for all of mankind and redeem them, because He was also a 'Son of man', of the same blood of EVERY KINDRED of Earth. Believe it or not, there is evidence that there was originally only one blood type- 'AB'. But by various deficiencies over time, it caused the other deficient blood types. The human flesh and blood of Jesus Christ made Him legally a NEAR KINSMAN of all mankind, not of Jews only. When Jesus lost His life's blood at His crucifixion, it was the same blood of ALL people that was shed.

God, by His infinite wisdom, placed Jesus in an exclusive and strategic position. This is where the VIRGIN BIRTH had to be an absolute necessity. By God's law, in order for Christ to redeem mankind out of bondage, the redeemer had to not only be NIGH OF KIN, but also FREE from bondage himself. That of itself confirms the fallen image of Adam had to be passed down through male descendants only. Otherwise, Jesus would have been under the same curse and bondage as all mankind via Adam and could not legally qualify as redeemer. If Jesus had been born of Joseph, then the curse of the fallen image of Adam would have passed to Jesus. Likewise, the curse could NOT be passed through Mary. Jesus would not have completely fulfilled the prophecy of the virgin birth, (Isa 7:14). The word "VIRGIN" means UNDEFILED, not only physically but also spiritually. If Christ had not been born of God, He would not have had the undefiled 'agape' spirit of LIFE of God to fulfill the law for Himself or for mankind.

## Christ the Redeemer

Thus the basics of the *Kinsman-Redeemer* law is simple: Mankind is born into bondage of sin and death because of the spiritual fall of Adam. God so 'agape' loved the *kosmos*, He placed His own *agape* spirit within the offspring of a woman to be born under the law to redeem man who is under the curse of the law. Christ was both under the law but free of its curse because in Him was no sin being free of the "GREAT TRANSGRESSION", (Ps 19:13). How Christ accomplished God's redemption plan and what it means, is what we will explore next.

### 4. Jesus, The Near Kinsman

Now that we have established what the "Oriental law of kinship" represents, and why mankind needs a redeemer if he is to escape eternal death, we are going to look at this law's first application: **to redeem a near kinsman out of bondage**. What do the *Kinsman-Redeemer* laws state, and what are the legal parameters that must be met by both the redeemer AND the redeemed.

*"And if a sojourner or stranger wax rich by thee,  
and thy brother that dwelleth by him wax poor,  
**AND SELL HIMSELF UNTO THE STRANGER***

*OR SOJOURNER BY THEE,*

*OR TO THE STOCK OF THE STRANGER'S FAMILY:"*

***"AFTER THAT HE IS SOLD HE MAY BE REDEEMED AGAIN;  
ONE OF HIS BRETHREN MAY REDEEM HIM:"***

*"Either his uncle, or his uncle's son, may redeem him,*

***OR ANY THAT IS NIGH OF KIN UNTO HIM OF HIS FAMILY  
MAY REDEEM HIM;***

*OR **IF** HE BE ABLE, HE MAY REDEEM HIMSELF."*

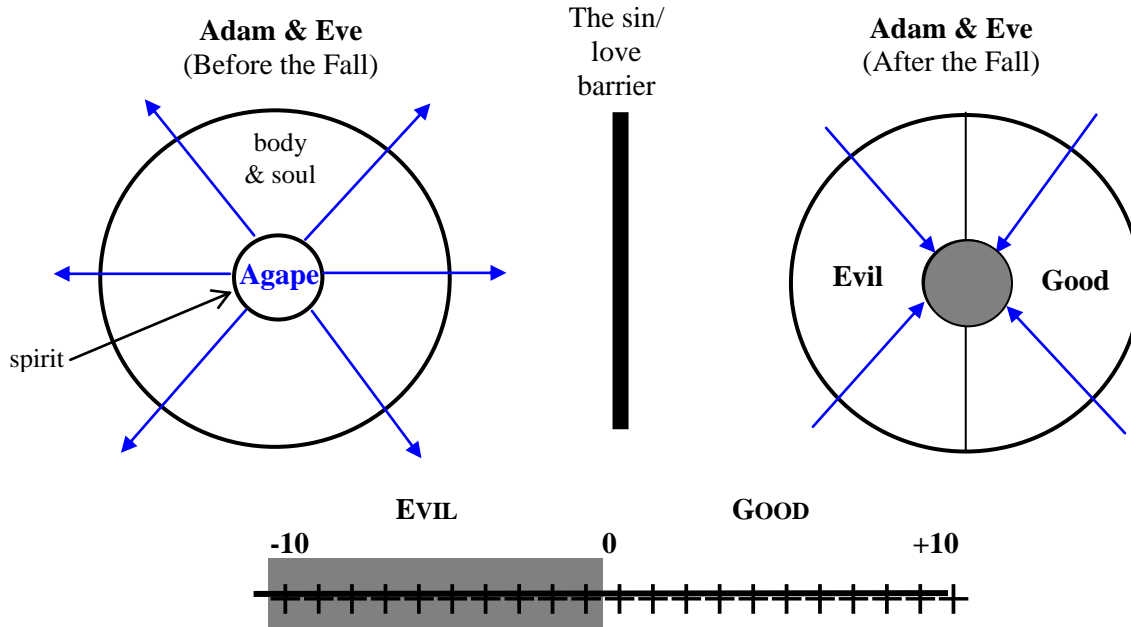
*(Leviticus 25:47-49)*

Verse 47 states the basic condition of the law. The application of the "STRANGER" in this context, represents SATAN. The phrase "SELL HIMSELF" is *makar* (maw-kar'), which means: **to sell self literally into slavery**. To "sell" means: **to give up something in exchange for something else, such as a payment**. Adam and Eve gave up eternal LIFE in exchange for the wisdom of the Tree of Knowledge which has the curse of eternal DEATH. Hindsight sees that was not a good swap, but remember at that time the serpent made it very appealing to Eve.

By consuming the very desirable fruit of that tree, Eve and Adam 'assumed' they would gain a WISDOM they did not possess, not understanding what DEATH really meant because at the time, it did not exist. To sink from the pure amoral innocence of above, down to the human morality below.

## PART 2 - *Jesus the Near Kinsman*

From a central awareness of experientially knowing God, to experiencing relative good and evil according to the desires of the flesh. To go from an unconditional love that flows out from God to His creation, to a conditional love that flows toward self. Mankind now operates on a "relative righteous" scale instead of God's righteousness which operates on an entirely different plane of existence. We can show this graphically:



God is no longer our Father, but Satan became our father, (John 8:44). God's creation was now corrupted. So corrupt He had to first destroy it by water, and will again destroy it by fire. God inserted into His law a way out, a redemption clause that was to be made available in due time.

The use of the word "redeem" in those verses is interesting. The first "REDEEMED" of verse 48 is, *geullah* (gheh-ool-law'), which is: **redemption including the right and the object, by implying a kindred relationship, the right**. It is the feminine passive participle of *ga'al*, which is: **to redeem according to the Oriental law of kinship**, which is used for the next word "redeem" in this verse. Thus the redemptive right is the receiving end of that law. These definitions themselves verify that THE RIGHTS of a kindred relationship may be reestablished by a redeemer who meets all legal parameters. Remember that Jesus said Himself, that He came to FULFILL (accomplish something in accordance to) the LAW.

***"For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto,*  
*but to minister,*  
**AND TO GIVE HIS LIFE A RANSOM FOR MANY."**  
*(Mark 10:45)***



## Christ the Redeemer

**"WHO GAVE HIMSELF A RANSOM FOR ALL,  
to be testified in due time."  
(1 Timothy 2:6)**

The legal application of the word "MINISTER" means: **a person acting as the agent or instrument of another**. It is real close to the meaning of "mediator". The word "RANSOM" in Mark is *lutron* (loo'-tron), which means: **something to loosen with, (literally) a redemption price, or (figuratively) atonement**. Christ came to 'loosen' the bondage of sin, death, and Satan. These verses conclude that the payment Christ made was His own LIFE, according to law. Paul reveals that man is a tripartite being, (1 Th 5:23). Since Christ gave HIMSELF, then that would include His whole **spirit, soul and body** as payment. This will be proven later.

The word "RANSOM" there in 1 Timothy is G487, *antilutron* (an-til'-oo-tron), which simply means: **a redemption-price**. It is a compound word from '*anti*' which means: **substitute**; and '*lutron*' which we saw as a redemptive price. In this context, Jesus was the **substitute redemption price** because the price of a person's soul is too precious, man cannot pay it. Again, Jesus was not substituting Himself as a 'fallen' man, but as a purchaser to redeem the fallen.

The phrase "TO BE TESTIFIED IN DUE TIME" is interesting. The word "TESTIFIED" is *marturion* (mar-too'-ree-on), from which we derive the word "martyr", specifically means: **evidence of the Decalogue**. The 'Decalogue' is specifically God's 10 commandments, (Ex 24:12, see 'law', Strong's no. H8451). In other words: **Christ was the manifestation of the 10 commandments**. Christ and the 10 commandments are in reality a testimony of God's divine *agape* love. That is why Jesus often said He and the Father are ONE, meaning of the same eternal Spirit, and why He said we also are to be ONE with them.

***If Jesus had not been ONE with the one true God, then He would have been another god and be in violation of the first commandment.*** Notice the tense of 1 Timothy 2:6. Christ 'gave', (past tense), 'to be' (future tense). The word "DUE" is *idios* (id'-ee-os), which means: **pertaining to self, one's own business**. Then "TIME" is *kairos* (kahee-ros'), which is: **an occasion, a set or proper time, an opportunity, due season, or a while**. Is Paul telling us that Christ came as the substitute redemption price, so the testimony of God's law will become one's own in due time? That it does NOT come instantly by a simple decision, but that it takes a while? That the divine *agape* love of God will manifest itself upon the obedient believer in its own proper time? These are all critical questions.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

The last parameter to verify is that of Leviticus 25:49. According to that clause, a person may redeem thierself **'IF'** they are able. Perhaps this clause was inserted specifically for Christ Himself because it is implied that mankind cannot redeem himself, otherwise there would have been NO need for the Christ child to have been born. Therefore, there should be sound scriptural evidence to verify this.

**"THERE IS NO MAN THAT HATH POWER OVER THE SPIRIT  
TO RETAIN THE SPIRIT;  
NEITHER HATH HE POWER IN THE DAY OF DEATH:  
AND THERE IS NO DISCHARGE IN THAT WAR;  
NEITHER SHALL WICKEDNESS DELIVER THOSE THAT ARE GIVEN TO IT."  
(Ecclesiastes 8:8)**

The foreknowledge of God knew that man would partake of the Tree of Knowledge and therefore would require a redeemer, (Rev 13:8-9). Except God intervene, MAN CANNOT ALTER HIS ETERNAL FATE. A PERSON DOES NOT HAVE POWER OVER THEIR OWN SPIRIT, ESPECIALLY IN THE DAY OF DEATH.

The word "RETAIN" is *kala'* (kaw-law'), which means: **to restrict, by act (hold back or in) or word (prohibit), to forbid, keep or keep back, refrain, restrain, retain, shut up, be stayed, withhold.** In fact, a person is at war with their own spirit, (Rom 7). Jesus worded it this way:

**"And they were *astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, WHO THEN CAN BE SAVED?"***

**"And Jesus looking upon them saith,  
WITH MEN IT IS IMPOSSIBLE,  
BUT NOT WITH GOD: FOR WITH GOD ALL THINGS ARE POSSIBLE."  
(Mark 10:26-27)**

Do we even understand the impact of that statement? Mankind is never given POWER over his own spirit. Having strong 'will power' has NO effect over one's spirit. Human "will" is power of the conscious mind. Salvation is a spiritual issue. That is why works of the law, or being a 'good' person has no bearing on salvation. Even if total self control over our conscious mind and actions were possible, it is still not power over the spirit, especially in death. That is why **THERE IS A DIFFERENCE BETWEEN CONVERSION AND REGENERATION.** Conversion to Christianity is a decision based upon the 'will' of our conscious desire. Regeneration is rebirth of the spirit by the will of God. *Conversion* is of the flesh which allows one to enter the BODY of Christ, whereas *regeneration* is the act of God upon our spirit which enters into union with Christ's Spirit of *agape*. Regardless what a person believes, THE FALL OBVIOUSLY HAPPENED. BONDAGE TO SIN IS REALITY.

## Christ the Redeemer

DEATH IS INEVITABLE. AND ETERNAL JUDGEMENT IS SURE. That is why unregenerate people instinctively fear death, because of the eternal judgment that follows.

*"They that trust in their wealth,  
and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches;  
**NONE OF THEM CAN BY ANY MEANS  
REDEEM HIS BROTHER,**  
NOR GIVE TO GOD A RANSOM FOR HIM:  
(FOR THE REDEMPTION OF THEIR SOUL IS PRECIOUS,  
AND IT CEASETH FOR EVER:)"  
(Psalm 49:6-8)*

Man cannot extricate himself or his kindred from spiritual bondage or death. This says NONE, not by any means. No matter how hard we try to think good thoughts or do 'righteous' deeds, we abide in sin and eternal death. The fall was not only REAL but also PERMANENT. That is why salvation is spiritual UNION with Christ. He said without Him we can do nothing, (Jn 15:5). Christ does not operate as man under the spirit of mammon. In the sight of God, man's wealth and influence is not only worthless, but a detriment (Mark 10:23-24). Notice who receives the ransom for our souls — it is God.

*"FOR FROM WITHIN,  
**OUT OF THE HEART OF MEN,**  
PROCEED EVIL THOUGHTS, ADULTERIES, FORNICATIONS, MURDERS,"  
"THEFTS, COVETOUSNESS, WICKEDNESS, DECEIT, LASCIVIOUSNESS, AN  
EVIL EYE, BLASPHEMY, PRIDE, FOOLISHNESS:"*

***"ALL THESE EVIL THINGS COME FROM WITHIN,  
AND DEFILE THE MAN."**  
(Mark 7:21-23)*

We saw this before in *Part I* and it is the root problem. "Of the heart", is in the spirit, (Rom 2:29). Now if the source of these evil things originate in the spirit, and man does not have power over his spirit, then guess what? We may be able to restrain ourselves from many evil thoughts and actions, but the spirit that generates them is still there operating in all its great diabolical splendor. Ever wonder why the most evil of thoughts suddenly come to mind from nowhere?

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

That is why ALL people constantly undergo spiritual and conscious warfare with their own selves and others. The un-regenerate spirit experientially KNOWS good and evil, but it does not KNOW God.

**"FOR THE WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH;  
BUT THE GIFT OF GOD IS ETERNAL LIFE  
THROUGH JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD."  
(Romans 6:23)**

Since death reigns by the knowledge of good and evil, and death is the payment for sin, then sin is the knowledge of good and evil (morality), and is disobedience to God. God told Adam and Eve not to eat of that tree. The day they ate of it, was the day they passed from life to death. Has this changed in 6000 years? Mankind continues to consume the knowledge of good and evil while rejecting the knowledge of God. Then comes the MESSIAH, the virgin birth of God's spirit within flesh and blood of man. Notice the 'gift' of eternal life is ONLY THROUGH Christ. The word for "GIFT" means more than what one may first think. It is *charisma* (khar'-is-mah), which means: **divine gratuity by deliverance, to pardon, a rescue**. It essentially means the same as the word 'save'. The root word *charis* means: **the divine influence upon the heart and its reflection in LIFE, true happiness**. ***Therefore the 'GIFT' OF GOD IS SALVATION VIA A NEW HEART OF 'AGAPE' LOVE THAT KNOWS GOD WHICH IS TRUE HAPPINESS.***

Is that not in total harmony with what we have learned thus far? Is that not what the New Covenant is all about? Is that not what many people truly seek in their lives, TRUE happiness? Are we willing to have it bad enough to DIE to ourselves that we might live THROUGH CHRIST? Through Christ God showed man the true essence of His *agape* love nature, (Jn 3:16). But man HATES God's nature, (Jn 3:19-20), for it shines a light upon his own evil heart.

Jesus came to change the HEART of man. Jeremiah said the heart of man is DESPERATELY WICKED and does not realize how wicked it is, (Jer 17:9). We have no power over our own 'heart' the Bible says. The New Covenant is God's NEW LAW of a new heart, a new spirit (Jer 31:31; Heb 12:24). The bestowment of '*agape*' love is the NEW LAW OF CHRIST, (Jn 13:34). They are one and the same law. The old law was a covenant of FLESH. The New Covenant is the law of the SPIRIT of Life through experiential union with the spirit of Christ. Therefore the Son of God and the "new law" could not be tolerated by man. He had to be REMOVED from the face of the earth. The Jewish Pharisees did not realize that by having the Gentiles put Jesus to death, they were sealing their own eternal fate and initiating the redemption for all men of all nations for all time.

## Christ the Redeemer

### 5. The Purchase

We are now going to take each parameter of the *kinsman-redeemer* law, and see how Christ fulfilled those parameters to effect the purchase of mankind. It is interesting that there are five parameters. Again, FIVE is the number for redemption in Scripture. These parameters are from Leviticus 25:47-50.

**1. The redeemer must be nigh of kin, of his family.** Since the law is being applied to mankind in general, then "his family" refers to the human race. We have already established that Jesus Christ was born into the human race, with the same blood that is in all people of all nations. Therefore, in this context, Christ fulfilled this parameter.

**2. The redeemer must be able to redeem.** Even though this parameter is not listed in Leviticus, nevertheless it is a "presumption of law" which goes without saying. The redeemer himself must be **FREE from any bondage**, and is **able to PAY** the price of redemption. Payment will be considered as separate parameter. Obviously if Christ was under the same bondage of sin, death, and Satan as the descendants of Adam, then how could He redeem?

**"WHEREFORE, AS BY ONE MAN**  
**SIN ENTERED INTO THE WORLD, AND DEATH BY SIN;**  
**AND SO DEATH PASSED UPON ALL MEN,**  
**FOR THAT ALL HAVE SINNED:"**  
**(Rom 5:12)**

The only logical reason for the virgin birth was to bring Christ in under the law without being under the bondage of sin and death. But how is that possible? Christ was the Son of God, His paternal father was God. Joseph had to be biologically excluded from the birth of Christ. Remember it was shown earlier, that **spiritual DEATH** (the spiritual curse of the Tree of Knowledge), is passed down through the male, as this verse also indicates. The underlying 'sin' is that man does not '*agape*' love. A word study on "ENTERED" and "PASSED UPON" means: **to traverse through, to go in through**. The word "traverse" gives the idea of a continuous passing along.

Apparently the spirit of all people born, whether male or female, **flows through their father**. The mother gives birth to the physical child, but the spirit is the image of the father, the image of Adam. Adam was originally formed in the image of his father -God, the Father of spirits (Zec 12:1, Heb 12:9). Adam fell and Seth was born in the fallen image of his father Adam, (Gen 5:3). Jesus' father was God, therefore He was not born with the curse of the fall but had the Spirit of '*agape*' love LIFE which fulfills the law, (Rom 13:10). Some suggest the fallen nature comes through male DNA of the sperm, and not DNA of the female egg.

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

But, we are not talking here of the physical, but that which is spirit. The literal fruit of the Tree of Knowledge obviously contained a human **physical** curse. Therefore the fruit may have altered the DNA of both male AND female to produce the traits of declining age and physical death. However, mankind is ever learning to MANIPULATE human DNA, and God would not have trusted the curse of the fall to something that man can 'monkey' with.

**"THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE FLESH IS FLESH;  
AND  
THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT IS SPIRIT."**

**"MARVEL NOT THAT I SAID UNTO THEE,  
YE MUST BE BORN AGAIN."**  
(John 3:7)

Jesus placed a definitive separation between FLESH and SPIRIT. Notice there are TWO PARALLEL BIRTHS. From the context of the discussion between Jesus and Nicodemus, the flesh of man cannot be re-born (John 3:4), but the spirit is able to be re-born. A concept that plays an important role in not only understanding the virgin birth, but also Christ's redemption upon the cross and regeneration. Salvation occurs by authentic **spiritual rebirth**, or *regeneration*. A person MUST be [spiritually] BORN AGAIN, to return back to *genesis* creative status, to return to the innate knowledge of God and spiritual ONENESS with the *Elohiym*.

**"FOR AS THE FATHER HATH LIFE IN HIMSELF;  
SO HATH HE GIVEN TO THE SON  
TO HAVE LIFE IN HIMSELF;"**  
(John 5:26)

Jesus was the only person who could fulfill the law because in Him was God's Spirit of LIFE. God is spirit (Jn 4:24), and God is *agape* love (1 Jn 4:8,16), it is the divine *agape* love Spirit of God that gives LIFE (1 Jn 3:14). And it is ONLY *agape* love that fulfills the law (Rom 13:10). Christ had the divine *agape* love of God in Him (Eph 3:19), by this spiritual power of God's *agape*, Christ fulfilled the law.

**"AND YE KNOW THAT HE WAS MANIFESTED TO TAKE AWAY OUR SINS;  
AND IN HIM IS NO SIN."**  
(1 John 3:5)

This verse also verifies that the fallen sin nature comes only through the father. Christ was not born of an earthly father, He was not under the bondage of sin, death, and Satan.

## Christ the Redeemer

He KNEW the Father, and had no experiential knowledge of good and evil. Jesus was FREE from sin and death, therefore ABLE to redeem.

**3. The redeemer must be willing to redeem.** This is another "presumption of law". The one who is ABLE to redeem must also be WILLING to step forward and accept the responsibilities of the act.

***"Therefore doth my Father love me,  
BECAUSE I LAY DOWN MY LIFE, THAT I MIGHT TAKE IT AGAIN."***

***"NO MAN TAKETH IT FROM ME,  
BUT I LAY IT DOWN OF MYSELF.***

***I HAVE POWER TO LAY IT DOWN,  
AND I HAVE POWER TO TAKE IT AGAIN.  
THIS COMMANDMENT HAVE I RECEIVED OF MY FATHER."***  
***(John 10:17-18)***

God the Father commanded that Jesus have the power to decide to lay down His own life, and to take it again in accordance to law. We know from the crucifixion story that Jesus allowed Himself to be taken by the Jews and be put to death, (Mat 26:51-56). We also know from his prayer in the garden that His final decision was made by an agonizing inward struggle, (Mat 26:42). This verse verifies that Jesus chose to undergo spiritual and physical death by His own free will, proving He was 'willing' to redeem.

**4. The redeemer must pay the price for redemption.** We have already seen that Jesus met all the parameters of the Leviticus law thus far. He was both qualified and willing to redeem. We also know that Jesus paid for man's life with His own life, (Ex 21:23-25). This is where we delve even deeper into redemption doctrine and discover the "fine points of the law", giving us a more full understanding of what went down on His cross that day.

***"AND HE SHALL RECKON WITH HIM  
THAT BOUGHT HIM  
FROM THE YEAR THAT HE WAS SOLD TO HIM  
UNTO THE YEAR OF JUBILEE:  
AND THE PRICE OF HIS SALE SHALL BE ACCORDING  
UNTO THE NUMBER OF YEARS,  
ACCORDING TO THE TIME OF AN HIRED SERVANT SHALL IT BE WITH HIM."***  
***(Leviticus 25:50)***

The condition of this parameter of the *kinsman-redeemer* law is two-fold. First, the redeemer is to 'reckon' with him who holds the rights over the one to be redeemed.

## PART 2 - *Jesus the Near Kinsman*

Second, the redeemed must also 'reckon' with his redeemer. This aspect of the law is critical in understanding the relationship between the cross and salvation. We must understand both applications of this parameter, first in view of the redeemer reckoning with the owner. This concept is also verified in two-ways. First, the word "BOUGHT" in this verse is *qanah* (kaw-naw'); which means: **to erect or create, i.e. to procure by purchase (cause to sell), to own or attain, a buyer, teach to keep cattle, get, provoke to jealousy, possessor, recover, to redeem.** God **caused a sell** of mankind out of bondage by sending His Son **to redeem** them. Christ **purchased** man which caused Him **to own** all of mankind. Through this redemption God **attained** the Gentiles. The Hebrew word for "GENTILES" is *goy*, which to a devout Jew means human '**cattle**'. Redemption of the Gentiles was to **provoke** the Jews **to jealousy**. Redemption is to **recover** to God what was lost. To **erect** the Church of the living God, to **create** Sons of God.

In verse 50, the price for redemption is according to the number of years that he who sold himself was under bondage. The redeemer must pay according to those number of years, as if one paid for a 'hired' servant. In this case we are dealing with the bondage of the human race and the number of years is a man's life. Remember, that man is a tripartite being. Thus the payment according to God's law is LIFE FOR LIFE, (Ex 21:23). That means...

**...SPIRITUAL LIFE FOR SPIRITUAL LIFE, and PHYSICAL LIFE FOR PHYSICAL LIFE. This is the price Christ MUST PAY ACCORDING TO THE LAW, and this is the price THE BIBLE DECLARES JESUS DID PAY. THE PURCHASE CONTRACT WAS SEALED by His SHED BLOOD, because LIFE is in the BLOOD.**

Beginning with verse 9 of Leviticus 25, God established a "JUBILEE" year. The word "JUBILEE" is *teruw'ah* (ter-oo-aw'), which basically means: **blowing of trumpets.** The jubilee year comes every 50<sup>th</sup> year of a 49 year cycle, **on the day of atonement.** The jubilee relates to redemption, (again we see the number five). Those in bondage were to be set free and returned to their possession. This also has prophetic application, as we will see later. The word "RECKON" is interesting. In this context it does basically mean: **to settle an account.** But Strong's definition of *chashab* (khaw-shab'), defines it: **to plait or interpenetrate, to weave or to fabricate, to plot or contrive (usually in a malicious sense).** Remember who mankind is under bondage to. God has ultimate power, to whom Christ paid the ransom to. God can give dominion to whosoever He wills.

He gave man over to the power of Satan as a legal condition of the fall **because man obeyed the serpent instead of God.** The word 'reckon' is very close to "reconcile".



## Christ the Redeemer

The Random House dictionary defines 'RECKON': **to settle an account, as with a person.** 'RECONCILE': **to settle a dispute, etc.; bring to an agreement.** God plotted to reconcile man to Himself through Christ, (2 Cor 5:18). Jesus, the son of man, settled with God the Father by fulfilling the law and paying the ransom price. Thereby God and His Son contrived a plan to legally interpenetrate the rights that Satan had over mankind. Christ also reckoned with Satan by spoiling his power and put him to open shame, (Col 2:15).

***"And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said,  
FATHER, INTO THY HANDS I COMMEND MY SPIRIT:  
AND HAVING SAID THUS,  
HE GAVE UP THE GHOST."  
(Luke 23:46)***

There is no debate that Christ physically died upon the cross. As Christians, we believe Christ DIED FOR US, even though many question His resurrection. But what IS debated by some: did Jesus undergo SPIRITUAL DEATH also upon the cross? If we apply the "life for a life" principle to the price of mankind's redemption, then we must consider that both physical and spiritual life was at stake. Physical death is overcome by immortality through Christ and the Tree of Life, (Rev 22:14); and spiritual rebirth is an absolute requirement of salvation, (Jn 3:7). Unregenerate man faces physical death, Hell, and eternal judgment which is the second spiritual death in the lake of fire, (Rev 20:14-15). So the question here is: did Jesus undergo a spiritual death same as Adam? Some say He could not, otherwise He was under the same condemnation as Adam. But did Jesus face and undergo any of the things man must face in death? Is there scriptural evidence one way or the other? The answer may surprise you.

***"FOR HE [GOD] HATH MADE HIM [CHRIST] TO BE SIN FOR US,  
WHO KNEW NO SIN;  
THAT WE MIGHT BE MADE THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD IN HIM."  
(2 Corinthians 5:21)***

This verse requires some review and thought. First notice that it was God the Father that made Christ to BE SIN even though He knew no sin because He was not born with the fallen nature. The word "KNEW" is *ginosko* (ghin-occe'-ko), which means: **to "know" in the absolute sense; to perceive, understand, have awareness of.** In other words, to have experiential knowledge of evil. But Christ Jesus never experienced evil, yet He became SIN. But how is that possible? The answer goes back to the ONE issue at the root of all mankind's sins: **the lack of God's spirit of divine love in our soul**, called *agape/agapao* in the Greek.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Remember, *agape* love FULFILLS the law and is the ONLY thing that fulfills it. Unregenerate man does not possess *agape* love, which is why by the law no person is justified, (Gal 2:16). God's love has to be BESTOWED by God Himself, (1 Jn 3:1), at the revelation of Christ to the believer, (1 Pet 1:13). Therefore, we all fall short of God's glory, because God's glory IS His *agape* love. (Jn 17:22, 26). The *agape* love of God is the law of *the Spirit of Life*, and without it is *the spirit of death*.

*Agape* is the basis of the New Covenant. The curse of the Tree of Knowledge caused Adam and Eve to lose the Spirit of God's *agape*, and they were left with a DEAD spirit because *agape* is ONE with God, the source of LIFE. Spiritual death came by Adam, in other words ***Adam MADE himself to be sin (without God's agape spirit). Therefore, God MADE Christ to be sin via a spiritual death on the cross by also spiritually FORSAKING Him due to the curse of the tree.***

The loves of man are radically different than God's love. That there is a difference is revealed by doing a word study for the Greek words for 'love' used between the confrontation Peter had with the resurrected Christ, (Jn 21:15-17, KJV). The divine love spirit of God operates on an entirely different plane than man's love. It is far above the morality scale of man. The point here is that from conception, Jesus was ONE with His Father, (Jn 10:30). Up to that point Jesus had spiritual UNION with God, the condition of 'perfection'.

***"I IN THEM, AND THOU IN ME,  
THAT THEY MAY BE MADE PERFECT IN ONE;  
AND THAT THE WORLD MAY KNOW THAT THOU HAST SENT ME,  
AND HAST [AGAPAO] LOVED THEM,  
AS THOU HAST [AGAPAO] LOVED ME."***

***"AND I HAVE DECLARED UNTO THEM THY NAME, AND WILL DECLARE IT:  
THAT THE [AGAPE] LOVE  
WHEREWITH THOU HAST [AGAPAO] LOVED ME  
MAY BE IN THEM, AND I IN THEM."***  
(John 17:23, 26)

That is the GOAL of Christ's redemption. Since it is the desire of Jesus Christ that the *agape* love of God be IN those who seek Him, then it should be obvious that UNTIL that occurs, mankind does not even KNOW what the genuine love of God is, let alone possess it. It has to be SHOWN him at the manifestation of Christ, (Jn 14:21-23). We saw in *Part I* how Jesus preached: "be ye perfect" as His Father is perfect and "be ye holy". The word 'PERFECT' does not mean what most people think it does. The Greek word is *teleioo* (tel-i-o'-o), which means: **to be complete or 'whole', to accomplish something or to consummate, to be consecrated, to finish,**

## Christ the Redeemer

**to fulfil.** The word has NOTHING to do with NOT MAKING MISTAKES or 'sins' of the flesh. In other words, a person is made perfect by being ONE in the divine love spirit of God and Christ. It is simply another word for 'saved'. This was the condition of Jesus when He picked up His cross. He was ONE with the Father and Jesus was holy because he and God the Father were ONE. **Jesus had spiritual LIFE.** But then, something happened on His cross that changed all of that:

*"And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying,  
Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say,*

**MY GOD, MY GOD,  
WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?"**

*(Matthew 27:46)*

The word "FORSAKEN" is *egkatalleipo* (en-kat-al-i'-po), which means: **to leave behind in some place, or to desert, forsake.** The root meanings are: **to abandon in a fixed state and moment of time; to be absent in place and time.** Or we could say TO SEPARATE. The *agape* love spirit of life in Christ was God IN HIM. Christ was forsaken by God on the cross for a moment of time. God left Christ behind, The heavenly Father abandoned UNION with Christ, just as He did with Adam and Eve because death IS separation from God.

At that point, Jesus experienced SPIRITUAL DEATH, He had to become SIN FOR US. Those who hold the position that Christ did not experience spiritual death, do not understand what was legally at stake here. They are ignorant of what the divine love of God is and how it applies to salvation. CHRIST SUFFERED SPIRITUAL DEATH UPON HIS CROSS. But the difference between Christ and Adam is Christ DID NOT TRANSGRESS THE LAWS OF GOD, BUT GOD FORSOOK CHRIST BECAUSE OF THE SAME BASIC CURSE THAT ADAM WAS UNDER. And how is that also possible? Is that not the same paradox as God made Christ to be sin, who knew no sin? The answer is YES, and we will find the scriptures reveals this mystery.

**"CHRIST HATH REDEEMED US FROM THE CURSE OF THE LAW,**

**BEING MADE A CURSE FOR US:**

**FOR IT IS WRITTEN, CURSED IS EVERY ONE**

**THAT HANGETH ON A TREE:"**

*(Galatians 3:13)*

Remember Jesus was born under the law and came to fulfill the law. Therefore Jesus was subject to all applications of the law. Why would the Apostle Paul mention this?

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Why does he make a reference to this curse if it was not significant in relation to redemption? Read this carefully, because other than the virgin birth, this is the ONE technicality that made redemption possible, and confirmation that Jesus had to suffer spiritual death. This actually REVERSED the virgin birth!

The word for 'CURSED' here is *katara* (kat-ar'-ah), defined: **imprecation, execration**; which means **to invoke evil upon or to cause separation**, and again, DEATH and SIN is SEPARATION from God. Thus we have a **direct correlation between Christ, redemption, the curse, and a tree**. First, let's look at the Old Testament law Paul refers to.

**"AND IF A MAN HAVE COMMITTED A SIN WORTHY OF DEATH,  
AND HE BE TO BE PUT TO DEATH,  
AND THOU HANG HIM ON A TREE:"**

**"HIS BODY SHALL NOT REMAIN ALL NIGHT UPON THE TREE,  
BUT THOU SHALT IN ANY WISE BURY HIM THAT DAY;  
(FOR HE THAT IS HANGED IS ACCURSED OF GOD;)  
THAT THY LAND BE NOT DEFILED,  
WHICH THE LORD THY GOD GIVETH THEE FOR AN INHERITANCE."  
(Deuteronomy 21:22-23)**

Do we not see the manifold wisdom of God here? Do we not have a perfect harmony of Scripture that is obviously tailored made so God could make redemption possible? Only a fool in his heart says there is no God or claim the Bible is simply 'religious' symbolism. There are at least two major revelations here.

First, we discover a reason why the Religious Jews could not leave Jesus' body upon the cross past sunset, (Jn 19:31). They were in the land God gave them for inheritance, so being in strict accordance with Jewish law, they did not want to be charged by the people of defiling the land. Another point here is that being "hanged on a tree" was an option. **It happens to be the only form of death that comes with a SPIRITUAL curse.** Even though it was the Romans that performed the execution of Christ, it was the Jews that accepted responsibility for His death, (Mat 27: 24-25). They accepted responsibility of Christ's blood upon themselves.

Look how this is worded. Paul stated: "cursed is EVERYONE that hangs on a tree", and the law says: "*he that is hanged is accursed of God*". Both statements may be interpreted to include a person that is either guilty or innocent of a charge. The curse comes from actually being hung on a tree, not necessarily the reason for the hanging. We have previously seen where this curse caused Jesus to be SIN by separation from the living God.

## Christ the Redeemer

The word "HANG" means: **to suspend**. The Random House dictionary definitions of 'HANG' include: **to fasten to a cross; crucify**. We have a definite portrait emerging here of Christ's redemption. **God placed a curse of spiritual death upon a specific tree in Eden.**

Adam **willfully** transgressed the commandment of God not to eat of it which forever placed him and his descendants under the spiritual curse OF A TREE. God also placed a curse upon anyone who dies suspended upon a tree, which obviously includes suspension upon a wooden cross. However unlike Adam, Jesus was innocent of transgressing the laws of God because He quickly died physically before He could commit a transgression of the ordinances of the law, and also he was falsely accused to die. In His case, Jesus was temporarily accursed of God, but the curse was NOT justified because He was innocent of any crime. He was briefly "**made a curse for us**" for a strategic reason. Therefore God could not be in SPIRITUAL UNION with anyone that He Himself legally CURSED by His own law. This is why God had to forsake Christ on the cross. *JESUS PAID THE FULL PRICE OF REDEMPTION, HE GAVE LIFE FOR LIFE, BOTH PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL. HE TOTALLY FULFILLED HIS PART OF THE KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW.*

Therefore, Christ became sin who had not known sin, and the fundamental sin is not possessing *agape*, the divine love spirit of God which is the law of LIFE. He next went into judgment as fully human, a "son of man" but a man who was without sins. A man who was fully justified by the ordinances of the law. Next, the scriptures prove that Christ went down into the belly of earth, into **HELL**.

***"For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; SO SHALL THE SON OF MAN BE THREE DAYS AND THREE NIGHTS IN THE HEART OF THE EARTH."***  
(Matthew 12:40)

***"Then Jonah prayed unto the LORD his God out of the fish's belly,"***

***"And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the LORD, and he heard me; OUT OF THE BELLY OF HELL CRIED I, and thou heardest my voice."***  
(Jonah 2:1-2)

***"HE [DAVID] SEEING THIS BEFORE SPAKE OF THE RESURRECTION OF CHRIST, THAT HIS SOUL WAS NOT LEFT IN HELL, NEITHER HIS FLESH DID SEE CORRUPTION."***  
(Acts 2:31) [Ps 16:10]

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

The word "LEFT" is *kataleipo* (kat-al-i'-po), which means: **to leave down or behind by implying to abandon, to forsake**. You cannot leave a soul down in Hell except they are first in Hell. This verse is so blatantly clear, how can anyone say that Jesus did not briefly enter into Hell.

***"For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, THAT HE MIGHT BRING US TO GOD, BEING PUT TO DEATH IN THE FLESH, BUT QUICKENED BY THE SPIRIT:"***

***"BY WHICH ALSO HE WENT AND PREACHED UNTO THE SPIRITS IN PRISON;"***  
***(1 Peter 3:18-19)***

These verses testify that Christ faced the same judgment as mankind faces. He died, went down into Hell to face judgment. This is where the justification was accomplished. This is where man could now be reconciled to God. This is why Jesus Christ had to become fully human to pay the full price for redemption so that we may be justified THROUGH HIM. Notice the reason for all this: "THAT HE MIGHT BRING US TO GOD", hence RECONCILIATION.

This is why there is no other redeemer than Christ himself. Not God the Father, not the Holy Spirit, not 'virgin' Mary, and no other religion or belief. No one else fulfilled the law and paid the price of redemption other than our Lord Jesus Christ. This verse confirms Jesus suffered a SPIRITUAL death as well as physical. The word 'QUICKENED' is *zoopoieo*, which means: **make alive**. Obviously since His spirit was made 'alive', then previous to this act IT WAS NOT ALIVE, but in a state of SPIRITUAL DEATH which confirms Jesus experienced spiritual death.

***And from JESUS CHRIST, who is the faithful witness, AND THE FIRST BEGOTTEN OF THE DEAD, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, (Revelation 1:5)***

The phrase "FIRST BEGOTTEN", is *prototokos* (pro-tot-ok'-os), which means: **first-born**. The word 'born' is *tikto*, meaning: **be born, bring forth, be delivered, be in travail**. This birth is in reference to his death, which can only mean that **JESUS WAS THE FIRST SON OF MAN TO BE SPIRITUALLY BORN AGAIN!** This of itself proves that Jesus died a spiritual death on his cross and had to be BORN AGAIN, being resurrected with the Spirit of Life from God the Father! That is why Peter said we have to follow his steps, (1 Pet 2:21).

## Christ the Redeemer

*"Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life:*

**NO MAN COMETH UNTO THE FATHER,  
BUT BY ME."**

*(John 14:6)*

This verse is about redemption and WITHOUT EXCEPTION. Without understanding how Christ fulfilled the *kinsman-redeemer* law, you cannot understand why he made this bold and exclusive statement. The world HATES this claim. Jesus negates every religion and all worldly wisdom by this statement. Free Masonry and its new age counterparts claim THERE IS NO CENTRAL TRUTH. That NO MAN can claim exclusive truth. Therefore they reject the deity of Christ. They imply that the 'Messiah' did not come in the flesh to redeem mankind from eternal death. They have the spirit of ANTICHRIST, (2 John 1:7), because:

**JESUS CHRIST IS CENTRAL TRUTH.**

We may either search and find that TRUTH, or be cast into outer darkness.

### 6. The Reckoning

We are now going to explore the last parameter of the *kinsman-redeemer* law, and a very important one in relation to Christian salvation. **This parameter is what Satan must conceal.** That is why the modern Church refuses to LEARN doctrine, especially the doctrine of Christ's fulfillment of *kinsman-redeemer* law.

**"AND HE SHALL RECKON WITH HIM  
THAT BOUGHT HIM**

**FROM THE YEAR THAT HE WAS SOLD TO HIM  
UNTO THE YEAR OF JUBILEE:  
AND THE PRICE OF HIS SALE**

**SHALL BE ACCORDING UNTO THE NUMBER OF YEARS,  
ACCORDING TO THE TIME OF AN HIRED SERVANT SHALL IT BE WITH HIM."**

*(Leviticus 25:50)*

**"AND AS A YEARLY HIRED SERVANT SHALL HE BE WITH HIM:  
AND THE OTHER SHALL NOT RULE WITH RIGOUR OVER HIM  
IN THY SIGHT."** *(Leviticus 25:53)*

**5. The redeem must 'reckon' with their redeemer.** It was said earlier, that the condition of this parameter was two-fold. We saw how Christ reckoned Himself AND US to God by paying the ransom.

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

But also we find that **the redeemed must reckon with his redeemer**, the Lord who bought him. Remember, the word "BOUGHT" in Leviticus 25:50 includes the meaning **to redeem**. The "HE" in this verse represents all mankind of all nations. Christ purchased the rights to the entire human race through the *kinsman-redeemer* law. Jesus Christ legally OWNS us. The weight of that concept must be fully understood in order to understand the true Lordship of Christ.

**"For whether we live, we live unto the Lord;  
and whether we die, we die unto the Lord:  
WHETHER WE LIVE THEREFORE, OR DIE,  
WE ARE THE LORD'S."**

**"FOR TO THIS END CHRIST BOTH DIED, AND ROSE,  
AND REVIVED, THAT HE MIGHT BE LORD  
BOTH OF THE DEAD AND LIVING."  
(Romans 14:8-9)**

Remember how we speculated that through redemption Christ may have achieved LORDSHIP over man? Well, here is confirmation. Jesus said that the Father was God only of the living, (Luke 20:38). The word "LIVING" is *zao* (dzah'-o) and refers to: '**spiritual** life, quickened'. Therefore it means only those that ARE BORN OF GOD, the 'regenerated'. Regeneration comes from God, (Mat 19:23-28). However, Christ purchased ALL of mankind past, present and future, (1 Pet 3:19-20) and salvation is not just having an indwelling of the Holy Spirit, but spiritual UNION with Christ, (Rom 8:9, Jn 14:23). The majority of mankind continues under the bondage of Satan, but Christ rightfully owns Earth and its inhabitants. The scriptures also decree there is a time when Christ will come to claim (redeem) that which He bought, which is the last aspect of redemption we will later explore. Christ's position in regards to redemption is fully established. But what about those He redeemed from death? How does a person go from bondage of sin, death, and Satan and enter into the redemption Christ made available? To better understand that question, we must view it also from a legal perspective.

According to the *kinsman-redeemer* law, each human soul MUST RECKON with the one that bought him. The person that is purchased out of bondage is indebted to the one who redeemed them. If a soul refuses to settle his or herself with Christ, then Christ must reject them out of hand and send them to eternal damnation. He has no other choice legally, because they did not allow Christ to finish fulfilling the last obligation of the NEW COVENANT for their soul.



## Christ the Redeemer

But then the apostates scream "WE ARE NOT UNDER THE LAW, BUT UNDER GRACE!" It was the grace of God that sent His Son for our redemption. **We are under the law UNTIL we are under the grace that is IN Christ Jesus**, (Jn 8:21-24). Christ IS the grace of God, and He came to fulfill the law. The redeemed MUST reckon with Him so that the law will be perfected in Him.

This includes the majority of Christians who follow after the false Christian prophets. Because of deception, they refuse the commands Christ and therefore must go into eternal ruin. **God has reconciled man unto himself THROUGH Christ, but every man MUST reckon himself with Christ in order to be reconciled to God**, (2 Cor 5:18-21). Unfortunately the 'MANY' OF Matthew 7 were ignorant of that part of the doctrine of *reconciliation*.

**"NOT EVERY ONE THAT SAITH UNTO ME, LORD, LORD,  
SHALL ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN;  
BUT HE THAT DOETH THE WILL OF MY FATHER  
WHICH IS IN HEAVEN."**

**"MANY WILL SAY TO ME IN THAT DAY, LORD, LORD,  
HAVE WE NOT PROPHESED IN THY NAME?  
AND IN THY NAME HAVE CAST OUT DEVILS?  
AND IN THY NAME DONE MANY WONDERFUL WORKS?"**

**"AND THEN WILL I PROFESS UNTO THEM,  
I NEVER KNEW YOU:  
DEPART FROM ME, YE THAT WORK INIQUITY."**

**"THEREFORE  
WHOSOEVER HEARETH THESE SAYINGS OF MINE,  
AND DOETH THEM,  
I WILL LIKEN HIM UNTO A WISE MAN,  
WHICH BUILT HIS HOUSE UPON A ROCK:"**  
*(Matthew 7:21-24)*

The word "MANY" is *polus* (pol-oos') which means: **mostly, greatest number, majority, altogether common**. These are CHRISTIAN believers who worship Jesus as their LORD, (1 Cor 12:3). They preach, teach, and evangelize Jesus as the Messiah. They have the power baptism of the Holy Spirit because they cast out demons and perform other miraculous works in His name. However, their salvation doctrine was obviously in GROSS ERROR. They were part of the "**common** salvation" Jude warned of. They stand before Christ at judgment condemned forever.

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

They stand before Him in SHOCK because they firmly believed their entire Christian lives they were saved by the blood of Christ.

**JESUS WARNED THE MAJORITY OF THOSE WHO CALL HIM LORD (CHRISTIANS) WILL BE REJECTED. HE WILL REJECT THEM BECAUSE THEY HEARD HIM BUT DID NOT DO WHAT HE SAID TO DO. THEY FAILED TO DO THE WILL OF GOD. IF THAT IS NOT PLAIN ENOUGH, JESUS REPEATS THAT WARNING SO NO BELIEVER WILL HAVE EXCUSE.**

**"AND WHY CALL YE ME, LORD, LORD,  
AND DO NOT THE THINGS WHICH I SAY?"**  
(Luke 6:46)

The MANY DID NOT DO the will of the Father. They would NOT DO what Jesus said about being saved. They DID NOT heed Jesus' warning to BEWARE of FALSE CHRISTIAN PROPHETS. They DID NOT enter in at the strait gate, and narrow way. They DID NOT pick up their own cross and follow Him to Calvary and beyond. They DID NOT hear the command of Jesus to agape love as He agape loved. **THEY DID NOT RECKON WITH THEIR REDEEMER.** They shout: GLORY! GLORY! "JESUS IS LORD!, JESUS IS LORD"! Then, at judgment, the all loving and all forgiving Jesus they thought they knew and *had their relationship with,* sends them away FOREVER without any remorse or clemency whatsoever. This is not 'legalism' but IT IS OBEDIENCE to the author of our salvation who COMMANDED us **to do something to FIND the LIFE that is IN Him.**

**"ENTER YE IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:  
FOR WIDE IS THE GATE, AND BROAD IS THE WAY,  
THAT LEADETH TO DESTRUCTION,  
AND MANY THERE BE WHICH GO IN THEREAT:"**

**"BECAUSE STRAIT IS THE GATE, AND NARROW IS THE WAY,  
WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE,  
AND FEW THERE BE THAT FIND IT."**

**"BEWARE OF FALSE PROPHETS,  
WHICH COME TO YOU IN SHEEP'S CLOTHING..."**  
(Matthew 7:13-15)

This is the ONLY way Christ gave to enter into the New Covenant of the new birth. This is the same command as taking up YOUR cross and following Him. With this came the warning of FALSE PROPHETS who have all the outward appearance as true Christians. Now compare this to 2 Peter 2:

## Christ the Redeemer

*"But there were false prophets also among the people, even as*  
**THERE SHALL BE FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU,**  
*who privily shall bring in damnable heresies,*  
**EVEN DENYING THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM,**  
*AND BRING UPON THEMSELVES SWIFT DESTRUCTION."*

**"AND MANY SHALL FOLLOW THEIR PERNICIOUS WAYS;**  
**BY REASON OF WHOM THE WAY OF TRUTH**  
**SHALL BE EVIL SPOKEN OF."**  
*(2 Pet 2:1-2)*

This passage of scripture relates to latter day Christianity and testifies that the eternal fate of the **majority of Christians** depends upon their understanding the impact of what Peter says here. This is NOT about some type of Jesus 'cult'. This is main stream Christianity and it points a finger at all of us, especially the preachers and teachers who are expected to know better.

The doctrine of false Christianity and false prophets is too great to review in this study. But we want to closely examine the phrase "**...denying the Lord that bought them**". The word "BOUGHT" is *agorazo* (ag-or-ad'-zo), which is: **to purchase; specifically to redeem, to buy**. Why is the redemption aspect of Christ related here to false Christian prophets? Why did Peter not simply say: "denying the Lord Jesus Christ"? This does not mean they refuse to believe Jesus is the Christ. The Biblical Greek for "DENY" is *arneomai* (ar-neh'-om-ahee), and is defined: **to contradict, disavow, reject or refuse**. Considering the entire second chapter of Peter in relation to the doctrine of false Christian prophets, these Christian leaders UPHOLD JESUS AS THE CHRIST, AS LORD AND SAVIOUR. But they **contradict** what Jesus said. They **reject** His commands of the WAY of salvation. Jesus said He was the "truth". Therefore, they do not speak evil of Jesus Christ, but they speak evil of **THE WAY OF THE TRUTH**. They are either the 'MANY' of Matthew 7, or else they are like them. They call Jesus LORD, but they obviously **refuse** to do the things He said.

The word '*arneomai*' is from a compound of '*alpha*', which is: **a negative particle**; and '*rheo*', which means: **to utter, speak or say**. Therefore it is what these false teachers DO NOT SAY that causes them to contradict Christ. The word 'disavow' is similar. The prefix "dis-" is also a negative particle, and "avow" means: **not to declare frankly or openly, not to acknowledge, not confess, or not admit to**. These people cannot acknowledge the truth, because they do not know it themselves. They bring DAMNABLE HERESIES into Christianity by omitting and perverting Jesus' commands to enter the strait gate. To pick up OUR OWN CROSS and follow Him to the place of the skull. Paul said in Timothy they heap teachers among themselves.

## PART 2 - *Jesus the Near Kinsman*

They produce their own teachers who procreate these heresies. The only heresies that are damnable are **FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINES**. The MANY (majority of Christians) follow these false Christian leaders and their damnable doctrines all the way to eternal damnation. Therefore we can only come to one conclusion why Peter relates this to Christ's redemption. Peter is giving us a clue to help recognize them.

**THEY IN TRUTH REJECT THE REDEMPTION OF CHRIST. THEY REFUSE TO RECKON WITH CHRIST BY DISAVOWING WHAT HE SAID. THEY NULLIFY THEIR REDEMPTION, BRINGING SWIFT DESTRUCTION UPON THEIR OWN SOULS. PETER SAYS THE MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS FOLLOW THE DAMNABLE WAYS OF THESE FALSE TEACHERS ALL THE WAY INTO ETERNAL RUIN. SATAN HAS THEM TO CONCEAL THE RECKONING (OBEDIENCE) TO CHRIST COMMANDS SO THAT REDEMPTION CANNOT BE PERFECTED BY THE GUIDANCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.**

The Greek for "FOLLOW" in this verse is *exakoloutheo* (ex-ak-ol-oo-theh'-o), which means: **to follow out, figuratively to imitate, OBEY, yield to**. These false Christian teachers present their phony, empty WAY of salvation to the unwary believer and the majority of Christians believe what they say, instead of searching out what Jesus actually said themselves. They obviously did not BEWARE of false Christian teachers, nor did they 'test' the spirits.

**"YE ARE BOUGHT WITH A PRICE;  
BE NOT YE THE SERVANTS OF MEN."**  
(1 Corinthians 7:23)

This redemption based verse confirms the warning of Peter. CHRISTIANS are not to **yield and obey** the 'WAY' of salvation given by the false prophets who say: "just have faith, just BELIEVE and trust that Jesus did everything for you. Say a simple prayer of dedication and your name is written down in heaven." But true BELIEF in Christ includes OBEYING HIM, who told us **to "enter ye in at the strait gate"; "pick up your cross and follow me"; "seek ye first"**. Their disobedience counts as disbelief. These men cause millions to be deceived, to wander OUT OF THE WAY. They cause the TRUE WAY of Jesus Christ to be SPOKEN AGAINST. They say there is NO strait gate, the narrow way is a "lifestyle choice", and Christ has already picked up the cross and DIED IN YOUR PLACE. That ANYTHING in addition to FAITH is a WORK, a LEGALISM, a HERESY! "Just TRUST in Jesus and maintain a **personal relationship** with Him ", they say. Such is a strong delusion. The MANY Christians claim they are 'called' of God. They claim they are the servants of the Lord Jesus Christ, but in reality they serve men. They preach and prophesy in Jesus' name.

## Christ the Redeemer

Some cast out demons by the power of the Holy Spirit in Jesus name. They heal the sick and promise monetary wealth all in the name of Jesus. But they **DENY** the **power of the cross**, FROM SUCH TURN AWAY.

**"AND WHOSOEVER DOTH NOT BEAR HIS CROSS  
AND COME AFTER ME,  
CANNOT BE MY DISCIPLE."**

**"SO LIKEWISE, WHOSOEVER HE BE OF YOU  
THAT FORSAKETH NOT ALL THAT HE HATH,  
HE CANNOT BE MY DISCIPLE."  
(Luke 14:27, 33)**

This is an hard saying, who can hear it? The truth is, only FEW. This REBUKES those who say Christ SUFFERED AND DIED IN THEIR PLACE, they do not have to pick up any cross. Or, that Christ did not LITERALLY MEAN to give up material wealth or careers to follow him. But the MANY say, "Christians are supposed to be materially blessed people, why are you saying these things? Jesus did not mean those things literally!" Then, why did He bother to say it at all?

The word "CANNOT" is a compound word '*ou-dunamai*', which means: **not able, impossible, not of power**. And this relates to being a TRUE disciple. If you study it out, you will find a true disciple of the Lord Jesus Christ is actually an unregenerate student of Christ. Someone who LEARNS what He said and obeys Him. They enter the strait gate and narrow way, the 'WAY' of reproof and instruction of the soul. If they continue, Christ will eventually be sent to them, (Acts 3:19-20).

The word "NARROW" is *thlibo* (thlee'-bo), which is defined: **to crowd, affliction, to suffer tribulation, trouble**. And the word "WAY" is *hodos* (hod-os'), which is: **a road, by implying a progress, route, act or distance; a mode or means, a journey, a highway**. The narrow 'WAY' is the way of judgment and a spiritual-soul death, so God can destroy a person's old life which is the spirit of death, and resurrect them into the NEW LIFE that is IN Christ Jesus, the HOPE of eternal salvation. This is what Jesus told the rich young ruler in Matthew 19. But he WOULD NOT DO IT. He would not forsake all he had to pick up his cross and follow Christ to the place of death. Instead of trusting Jesus' commands, he chose to keep his trust in worldly security. He, like the MANY, **refused to reckon with the Lord that bought him**. He failed the first test of TRUE Biblical faith, to "ENTER YE IN at the Strait Gate".

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

### 7. The Royal Priesthood.

The fourth facet of Christ's work of redemption was the establishing of the Royal Priesthood whereby He became the High Priest who ever makes intercession for us.

***"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest  
BY THE BLOOD OF JESUS,"***

***"BY A NEW AND LIVING WAY, WHICH HE HATH CONSECRATED FOR US,  
THROUGH THE VEIL, THAT IS TO SAY, HIS FLESH;"***

***"AND HAVING AN HIGH PRIEST OVER THE HOUSE OF GOD;"***  
(Hebrews 10:19-21)

This is another application of Christ's blood. The word 'HOLIEST' is *hagion* (hag'-ee-on); which essentially means: **the most holy place of God's Temple**, the innermost room that housed the Ark of the Covenant. The 'ARK' is a type of vessel that held the 10 commandments. Christ's FLESH is also a type of vessel that held God's spirit of *agape* love, the essence of the 10 commandments. The High Priest's responsibility was to enter once a year through the veil into the most holy place and sprinkle the blood of the sacrificial lamb onto the mercy seat of the Ark for the sins of the people, (Heb 9:6-7). To intercede between God and His people for reconciliation. The "mercy seat" of the Ark represented God's throne. The blood of Christ made a new WAY that we may approach God's throne directly through him.

***"BUT CHRIST BEING COME AN HIGH PRIEST  
OF GOOD THINGS TO COME,  
BY A GREATER AND MORE PERFECT TABERNACLE,  
NOT MADE WITH HANDS, THAT IS TO SAY, NOT OF THIS BUILDING;"***

***"NEITHER BY THE BLOOD OF GOATS AND CALVES,  
BUT BY HIS OWN BLOOD  
HE ENTERED IN ONCE INTO THE HOLY PLACE,  
HAVING OBTAINED ETERNAL REDEMPTION FOR US."***  
(Hebrews 9:11-12)

***"WHITHER THE FORERUNNER IS FOR US ENTERED,  
EVEN JESUS, MADE AN HIGH PRIEST FOR EVER  
AFTER THE ORDER OF MELCHISEDEC."***  
(Hebrews 6:20)

Hebrews 9 relates Jesus as High Priest to that of eternal redemption. His commission is forever which was made manifest with the first High Priest of God during the days of Abraham, (Gen 14:18). Hebrew for 'MELCHISEDEC'

## Christ the Redeemer

is *Malkiy-Tsedeq* (mal-kee-tseh'-dek), which comes from two words: H4428 which means **to ascend to the throne and reign**; and H6664 **morally or legally right**. Combined they mean: "**king of righteousness**", a name reserved for Christ.

**"BUT THIS MAN, BECAUSE HE CONTINUETH EVER,  
HATH AN UNCHANGEABLE PRIESTHOOD."**

**"WHEREFORE HE IS ABLE ALSO TO SAVE THEM TO THE UTTERMOST  
THAT COME UNTO GOD BY HIM,  
SEEING HE EVER LIVETH  
TO MAKE INTERCESSION FOR THEM."**  
(Hebrews 7:24-25)

That is why this facet of redemption is so important to us. Christ is at the right hand of God the Father continually interceding on our behalf, for our prayer requests and our sins. To plead to God for our behalf. This was exactly the duty of the High Priest of Israel using the sacrificial blood for atonement. Search the entire doctrine of redemption and you will not find a one selfish motive in what Christ did for us on the cross. As "King of Righteousness", He is able to save us to the uttermost. The word 'UNCHANGEABLE' is *aparabatos* (ap-ar-ab'-at-os); which is: **not passing away, untransferable, perpetual**. And 'PRIESTHOOD' is an order which implies it has many priests.

**"My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not.  
AND IF ANY MAN SIN,  
WE HAVE AN ADVOCATE WITH THE FATHER,  
JESUS CHRIST THE RIGHTEOUS:"**

**"AND HE IS THE PROPITIATION FOR OUR SINS:  
AND NOT FOR OURS ONLY, BUT ALSO FOR THE SINS OF  
THE WHOLE WORLD."  
(1 John 2:1-2)**

The key word here is 'ADVOCATE' which is *parakletos* (par-ak'-lay-tos), which is **an intercessor**. And 'PROPITIATION' is another word for atonement. It was Christ's atonement that made intercession possible which He reconciled and continues to reconcile ANYONE to God THROUGH HIM.

**"Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house,  
AN HOLY PRIESTHOOD, TO OFFER UP SPIRITUAL SACRIFICES,  
ACCEPTABLE TO GOD BY JESUS CHRIST."**

**PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

**"BUT YE ARE A CHOSEN GENERATION,  
A ROYAL PRIESTHOOD,  
AN HOLY NATION, A PECULIAR PEOPLE; THAT YE SHOULD SHOW FORTH  
THE PRAISES OF HIM WHO HATH  
CALLED YOU OUT OF DARKNESS INTO HIS MARVELLOUS LIGHT:"  
(1 Peter 2:5,9)**

**"AND FROM JESUS CHRIST, WHO IS THE FAITHFUL WITNESS,  
AND THE FIRST BEGOTTEN OF THE DEAD,  
AND THE PRINCE OF THE KINGS OF THE EARTH.  
UNTO HIM THAT [AGAPAO] LOVED US,  
AND WASHED US FROM OUR SINS IN HIS OWN BLOOD,"**

**"AND HATH MADE US KINGS AND PRIESTS  
UNTO GOD AND HIS FATHER;  
TO HIM BE GLORY AND DOMINION FOR EVER AND EVER. AMEN."  
(Revelation 1:5-6)**

Both 1<sup>st</sup> Peter and Revelation reveal that those redeemed by the blood of the lamb are an eternal fraternity of kings and priests who, like Christ, shall rule over the Earth. There is no "separation of Church and State" in God's government. This ties directly back to the original purpose of mankind to have dominion over Earth. Except now that dominion will be through Christ who is the HIGH Priest forever. We saw that dominion means acquiring LEGAL rights to, which is what we want to explore further in the next section.

**"FOR THERE IS ONE GOD,  
AND ONE MEDIATOR BETWEEN GOD AND MEN,  
THE MAN CHRIST JESUS;"**

**"WHO GAVE HIMSELF A RANSOM FOR ALL,  
TO BE TESTIFIED IN DUE TIME."  
(1 Timothy 2:5-6)**

**"BUT NOW HATH HE OBTAINED A MORE EXCELLENT MINISTRY, BY HOW  
MUCH ALSO  
HE IS THE MEDIATOR OF A BETTER COVENANT,  
WHICH WAS ESTABLISHED UPON BETTER PROMISES."  
(Hebrews 8:6)**

**"And for this cause  
HE IS THE MEDIATOR OF THE NEW TESTAMENT,  
that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were  
under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise  
of eternal inheritance." (Hebrews 9:15)**



## Christ the Redeemer

We first saw Jesus referred to as a *High Priest*, an *intercessor*, an *advocate*, and now a *mediator*. Greek for 'MEDIATOR' is Strong's G3316, *mesites* (mes-ee'-tace) which is defined: **a go-between, an internuncio, or reconciler (intercessor)**. Random House dictionary defines 'nuncio' as: **a diplomatic representative**, and 'INTER-' means: **among, between**. Notice Timothy says: "THE MAN JESUS CHRIST", as Jesus was both Son of Man and Son of God. Therefore He fulfills both positions as THE diplomatic ambassador of the NEW COVENANT between God and man. Likewise, regenerated Christians also become true ambassadors of Christ, (2 Cor 5:20).

### 8. Defeat Of Principalities

Even though it is evident that Jesus defeated Satan at the cross, we will look at it from a legal perspective because it is also one of the five major works of Christ's *Redemption*.

***"Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood,  
HE ALSO HIMSELF LIKEWISE TOOK PART OF THE SAME;  
THAT THROUGH DEATH  
HE MIGHT DESTROY HIM THAT HAD THE POWER OF DEATH,  
THAT IS, THE DEVIL;"  
"AND DELIVER THEM WHO THROUGH FEAR OF DEATH  
WERE ALL THEIR LIFETIME SUBJECT TO BONDAGE."***  
(Hebrews 2:14-15)

We saw this verse earlier which proves that Satan has the power of DEATH, a dominion established at the FALL. These verses also confirm that Christ has legal right to deliver those in bondage. How? We saw how through God's *law of kinsman-redeemer* purchase.

***"YET MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL,  
WHEN CONTENDING WITH THE DEVIL  
HE DISPUTED ABOUT THE BODY OF MOSES,  
DURST NOT BRING AGAINST HIM A RAILING ACCUSATION,  
BUT SAID, THE LORD REBUKE THEE."***  
(Jude 1:9)

This is a mysterious statement only found in the book of Jude. The Bible also does not attempt to prove that there are literal angels or devils, but presents them as matter of fact. Here, God's chief arch-angel Michael is in a legal dispute with Satan over the body of Moses. The word "DISPUTE" basically means: **to engage in a verbal argument**.

## PART 2 - *Jesus the Near Kinsman*

The word for "BODY" is *soma* which means: **the body as a sound whole, or figuratively a slave**. The root word is *sozo* which is the same word used for "SAVED", which means: **to save, deliver or protect, heal, preserve, make whole**. By the definitions, that means they were in a legal debate over the redemptive RIGHTS of Moses' body as a whole which includes the spirit and soul. Since the flesh part of the body returns to dust, then why would Satan argue over DUST? The point Jude makes here is that Michael DARED not to accuse or judge Satan, which according to Jesus, would then cause a judgment to be made against Michael, (Mat 7:1). From the perspective of redemption, this gives insight into the spiritual realm. Remember the word "DEVIL" means: **false accuser**. To 'ACCUSE' means: **to make a charge or legal claim**. This verse proves that Satan is well familiar with legalities and rights over man. Michael knew the ultimate decision of that dispute should be settled only by the Lord Himself.

**"FOR WE WRESTLE NOT AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD,  
BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS,  
AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS WORLD,  
AGAINST SPIRITUAL WICKEDNESS IN HIGH PLACES."  
(Ephesians 6:12)**

Many a Christian has made 'jest' of Satan, and do not realize the position and POWER Satan and his angels hold. Why would God dispatch and have His angels encamp around those who fear Him? (Ps 34:7). Could it be Satan could bring devastating evil among those who attempt to OBEY Christ and seek truth? The word "PRINCIPALITIES" and "POWERS" both relate to: **a magistrate**. A 'magistrate' is: **an administrator of LAW**. One who has been given jurisdiction to **accuse and administer punishment**. Is it not interesting that the Apostle Paul stated that one within the Church at Corinth should be turned over to Satan for their body to be destroyed because of living in a sexual sin? (1 Cor 5:1-5). The Greek word used for "RULERS" in this verse is *kosmokrator* [kos-mok-rat'-ore], which is defined: **a world-ruler, an epithet of Satan**. '*Kosmo*' means orderly arrangement. This is an organized system of legal jurisdiction allowed by God for the administration of His law, against those who rebel against Him.

**"BLOTTING OUT THE HANDWRITING OF ORDINANCES THAT WAS AGAINST  
US, WHICH WAS CONTRARY TO US, AND TOOK IT OUT OF THE WAY,  
NAILING IT TO HIS CROSS;"**

**"AND HAVING SPOILED PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS,  
HE MADE A SHOW OF THEM OPENLY,  
TRIUMPHING OVER THEM IN IT."  
(Colossians 2:14-15)**

## Christ the Redeemer

These verses relate to Christ's redemptive work and the defeat of Satan's right of dominion. Notice the connection between the law and Satan's hierarchy. It was previously established that the power Satan has over man is via the power of death; and death is by sin. Jesus defeated the power of Satan by overcoming death, because in Jesus was no sin. We saw where Adam and Eve were given the Spirit of Life when they were created which means they also were originally free from sin. Therefore, they and their offspring would have been free of death and God would not have created the DESTROYER, (Isa 54:16). However by Adam came not only sin and death, but ultimately the law and a redeemer.

The "handwriting of ordinances" refer to the legal precedent of God's law over mankind. The word "HANDWRITING" is *cheirographon* (khi-rog'-raf-on), which specifically means: **a legal document or bond**. This confirms the Holy Bible is not only a book of stories, of testimony and prophecy but also a legal document. The word "ORDINANCES" is *dogma*, which means: **a law, decree, or ordinance**. It is the origin of our word 'dogma' which basically means: **a doctrine of principles**.

Notice the implication that the law was NOT DESTROYED. The word "NAIL" simply means: **fastened in one place, to secure; or figuratively to make final, to settle once and for all**. And what was the law securely fastened to? THE CROSS OF CHRIST. The cross is an INSTRUMENT OF DEATH. It was by DEATH that Christ overcame Satan and fulfilled the law. It was the *agape* love of God that put Christ on His cross, which forever settled the law. The law is but the reflection of *agape*.

Before Christ came, mankind had to enter into judgment through the law. Now mankind must enter into judgment by the cross. The law brings forth death, (Rom 7:5); and the cross brings forth death, (Phil 2:8). We are to take up our cross, for by it brings death to the heart of man, the old spirit man under the Old Covenant. AFTER the death of the cross comes judgment at the revelation of Jesus Christ. **"...once to die, but after this the judgment"**, (Heb 9:27). After judgment, comes the resurrection of a new life, a new spirit man renewed in the knowledge of Christ.

**"BUT IS NOW MADE MANIFEST BY THE APPEARING  
OF OUR SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST,  
WHO HATH ABOLISHED DEATH,  
AND HATH BROUGHT LIFE AND IMMORTALITY TO LIGHT  
THROUGH THE GOSPEL:"  
(2 Timothy 1:10)**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

This verse confirms what we just read in Colossians. By Jesus abolishing death, He spoiled the works of Satan, because Satan works death by sin. That is why mankind has the compulsion to sin so Satan can glory in us. Christ could not abolish Satan at that time, but He did triumph over him and death, thereby effecting redemption. Notice that LIFE and IMMORTALITY are shown as separate things, and that the Gospel ONLY brings them to LIGHT. This proves to be a very important as we will find. The Gospel only TESTIFIES of them, it does not GRANT THEM by 'belief'. The scriptures only TESTIFY of Jesus, and believing in Scripture is not salvation. It may surprise many, but **REDEMPTION DOES NOT COME BY CLAIMING THE PROMISES OF SCRIPTURE BY FAITH.**

**"O DEATH, WHERE IS THY STING?  
O GRAVE, WHERE IS THY VICTORY?"**

**"THE STING OF DEATH IS SIN;  
AND THE STRENGTH OF SIN IS THE LAW."  
(1 Corinthians 15:55-56)**

The word "STING" is *kentron*, which means: a "center" point, or **divine impulse**. An 'impulse' means: **an impelling force**. Death has 'grounds' over mankind because it is the payment of the transgression of God's universal law. A law is worthless unless it is enforced and there is CONSEQUENCE. Therefore there is consequence to sin because of the laws of God are ENFORCED by a DIVINE FORCE upon man. If DEATH is an impelling force resulting from the transgression of God's laws, then the opposite must also be true: **LIFE IS A DIVINE FORCE OF GOD'S AGAPE LOVE, BECAUSE IT FULFILLS THE LAW.**

**"FOR THE LAW HAVING A SHADOW OF GOOD THINGS TO COME,  
AND NOT THE VERY IMAGE OF THE THINGS,  
CAN NEVER WITH THOSE SACRIFICES WHICH THEY OFFERED  
YEAR BY YEAR CONTINUALLY  
MAKE THE COMERS THEREUNTO PERFECT."  
(Hebrews 10:1)**

The law provided sacrifice for sins, BUT it could not make one PERFECT (regenerate). Christ fastened the law to HIS cross forever by fulfilling it. **He took it out of the 'WAY'**, and made a NEW and LIVING 'WAY' through redemption, by His own blood, (Heb 10:19-20). For LIFE is in the blood, (Lev 17:11), and He gave life for life. When we speak of law, it is not limited to the Old Testament ordinances that were nailed to the cross of Christ, but also the NEW law of the Gospel. The word for law Paul used previously is *nomos* (nom'-os), which means: **generally regulation, specifically of Moses and ALSO of the Gospel.**

## Christ the Redeemer

Jesus Christ brought the 'gospel', and in that gospel is the NEW LAW OF AGAPE LOVE, the NEW COVENANT, which was previously proven that Christ the mediator of.

**"A NEW COMMANDMENT I GIVE UNTO YOU,  
THAT YE [AGAPAO] LOVE ONE ANOTHER;  
AS I HAVE [AGAPAO] LOVED YOU,  
THAT YE ALSO [AGAPAO] LOVE ONE ANOTHER."  
(John 13:34)**

**"AND I HAVE DECLARED UNTO THEM [MY DISCIPLES] THY NAME,  
AND WILL DECLARE IT:  
THAT THE [AGAPE] LOVE  
WHEREWITH THOU HAST LOVED ME  
MAY BE IN THEM, AND I IN THEM."  
(John 17:26)**

Since *agape* love has to be bestowed by the Father, (1 Jn 3:1), then unless that occurs, NO ONE can fulfill Christ's command and the new law of the NEW TESTAMENT. How is it bestowed? By reckoning with our redeemer, by obeying the commands of Christ to FIND it. You do not "find" something except you first initiate a "search" for it. And a search does not end, until you have actually "found" what it is you were searching for.

**"AND ENTER NOT INTO JUDGMENT WITH THY SERVANT:  
FOR IN THY SIGHT SHALL NO MAN LIVING BE JUSTIFIED."  
(Psalm 143:2)**

The Psalmist here is praying that God will not enter into judgment with him. Why? Worshipers of God who never enter into true spiritual union with Christ to become "sons of God" remain as servants of God, subject to the laws of God.

NO MAN can ever stand up to the laws of God. God's ways are not our ways, his thoughts are not our thoughts. His 'sight' is through the essence of divine *agape*. Mankind's sight was opened to SELF, a self-centered spirit that serves the desires of his flesh. A self serving 'god' making judgments based upon his scale of relative righteousness. **It is ONLY through Christ that a person can be justified in sight of God's law**, because Christ IS the spiritual essence of God's law, he is the Spirit of the WORD made flesh.

**HE THAT COMMITTETH SIN IS OF THE DEVIL;  
FOR THE DEVIL SINNETH FROM THE BEGINNING.**

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

### **FOR THIS PURPOSE THE SON OF GOD WAS MANIFESTED, THAT HE MIGHT DESTROY THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL.**

**(1 John 3:8)**

This statement is as blunt as it comes. We find a direct correlation between Christ's birth under the law to the destroying of the works of Satan. Since Satan's works of sin began at the fall of Adam, then the world as mankind has always known it is the work of Satan. When final redemption comes, Satan will be temporarily put away during the thousand year reign of Christ, and his works destroyed until he is loosed for another season. Afterward, at the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT Satan will be forever cast in a lake of fire with his angels and those he deceived as God foretold in Ezekiel 28.

**"BUT OF HIM ARE YE IN CHRIST JESUS,  
WHO OF GOD IS MADE UNTO US  
WISDOM, AND RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND SANCTIFICATION, AND  
REDEMPTION:"**  
**(1 Corinthians 1:30)**

Salvation IS conditional. Verses such as this one always contain qualifiers such as "IF" or "IN". We are sanctified and redeemed "IF" we are "IN" Christ. IF we do in fact have TRUE spiritual UNION with the living Christ.

**REDEMPTION IS IN THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, NO WHERE ELSE. NOT IN THE PROMISES OF SCRIPTURE; NOT IN BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT; NOT EVEN BELIEF AND A STRONG FAITH RELATIONSHIP IN JESUS. REDEMPTION IS ONLY THROUGH TRUE EXPERIENTIAL UNION WITH CHRIST BECAUSE THE REDEMPTION IS ONLY IN HIM. THE LAWS OF GOD ARE ONLY FULFILLED BY THE AGAPE LOVE OF THE FATHER WHICH IS FOUND IN CHRIST JESUS.**

IF a person is truly IN Christ and God's divine love is also IN them, then the scriptures list five things man is redeemed from. Remember, five is the number for GRACE and REDEMPTION.

- 1. Redeemed from curse of the law, (Gal 3:13)**
- 2. Redeemed from all iniquity, (Titus 2:14)**
- 3. Redeemed from the power of the enemy, (Psa 107:2; 136:24; Jer 31:11; Acts 26:18; Heb 2:14)**
- 4. Redeemed from the power of the grave [death], (Psa 49:15)**
- 5. Redeemed from the fear of death, (Heb 2:15)**

Notice again the connection between iniquity (sin), Satan, and the law. SATAN'S DOMINION IS THE RESULT OF GOD'S LAW UPON MAN FOR HIS SIN. Jesus came to break that connection. He commanded us: "seek ye first the kingdom of God and His righteousness". Christ IS the wisdom and righteousness of God and also IS the REDEMPTION.

## Christ the Redeemer

The word used for "REDEMPTION" here is *apolutrosis* (ap-ol-oo'-tro-sis), in this context means: **Christian salvation**. And, Christian salvation is the result of the bestowment of God's divine *agape* love within the human heart. **Possession of this love type is the only thing that IS eternal life through Jesus Christ.**

**"NEITHER IS THERE SALVATION IN ANY OTHER:  
FOR THERE IS NONE OTHER NAME UNDER HEAVEN  
GIVEN AMONG MEN, WHEREBY WE MUST BE SAVED."  
(Acts 4:12)**

This is NOT some symbolic rhetoric or some ancient writer's words of will worship, but a **LEGALLY BINDING STATEMENT OF GOSPEL LAW**. There is no other application to this statement except in relation to the *kinsman-redeemer* law. Again, the word "MUST" is used to indicate that it is absolutely necessary and legally binding that eternal salvation is **not possible** by ANY RELIGION OR PERSONIFICATION, OTHER THAN IN JESUS CHRIST, THE SON OF THE LIVING GOD. There is also NO ETERNAL SALVATION by simply 'believing' Jesus is the Son of God. The word "NAME" is *onoma* (on'-om-ah), which means: **an authority**. The word is derived from G1097, *ginosko* (ghin-occe'-ko), which essentially means: **to "know" absolute**. Jesus Christ represents the AUTHORITY of God. We must RECKON WITH THE ONLY ONE who is 'AUTHORIZED' TO REPRESENT THE ETERNAL GODHEAD AS MEDIATOR. We are to KNOW CHRIST and HIS FATHER ABSOLUTE. TO SET TO OUR SEAL THAT GOD IS TRUE, (Jn 3:33).

**"AND THIS IS LIFE ETERNAL,  
THAT THEY MIGHT [GINOSKO] KNOW THEE  
THE ONLY TRUE GOD, AND JESUS CHRIST,  
WHOM THOU HAST SENT."  
(John 17:3)**

Salvation is ONE with God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ through their divine *agape* love spirit, (Jn 17:26). It is NOT simply "believing"; it is NOT baptism of the Holy Spirit; it is NOT membership in a Church where they "heap" false Christian preachers and teachers who say that all Christians are saved.

It is not just "trusting" in Jesus and having a close "personal relationship" with Him. NONE of that has to do with legal fulfillment of God's law through true union IN Christ. This does not say: "and this is life eternal, THAT THEY HAVE FAITH IN the only true God and Jesus Christ"!

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**NONE OF THAT RECKONS US TO THE ONE LORD WHO BOUGHT US. NONE OF THAT IS OBEYING THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST TO EXPERIENTIALLY FIND HIM WHICH COMES BY HIS MANIFESTATION TO US. NONE OF THAT PRODUCES THE "CHASTISEMENT" THAT EVERY AUTHENTIC SON OF GOD IS TO UNDERGO. YOU EITHER ENTER INTO GOD'S GRACE BY THE WAY CHRIST GAVE, OR YOU REMAIN UNDER THE CURSE OF THE LAW. THAT IS THE FREE WILL CHOICE THAT GOD FOREKNOWS EACH PERSON WILL ULTIMATELY MAKE. SATAN HAS YOU, AND WANTS TO KEEP YOU IN ETERNAL RUIN.**

**"AND THEN WILL I PROFESS UNTO THEM,  
I NEVER KNEW YOU:  
DEPART FROM ME, YE THAT WORK INIQUITY."  
(Matthew 7:23)**

Remember, these are the 'MANY', the majority of Christians who call Jesus Lord, and 'believe' in His name. Christ waits till judgment to tell the majority of Christians that He NEVER, not once in their life time, EXPERIENTIALLY KNEW them. Contrary to their belief, faith and trust, Christ NEVER entered into genuine spiritual union with them. They were NEVER (in truth) born again, they obviously NEVER reckoned with their redeemer, nor believed they were required to. It is evident that they believed the lie that anything in addition to "FAITH", was a work or 'legalism'. Christ VOMITS the last day church OUT OF HIS BODY because they are UNREGENERATE and FOUL. Why?

**"BECAUSE THOU SAYEST,  
I AM RICH, AND INCREASED WITH GOODS, AND HAVE NEED OF NOTHING;  
AND KNOWEST NOT**

**THAT THOU ART WRETCHED, AND MISERABLE, AND POOR,  
AND BLIND, AND NAKED:" [UNREGENERATE]  
(Revelation 3:17)**

The word "RICH", and the phrase "INCREASED WITH GOODS" are from the same root word *ploutos* (ploo'-tos), which literally means: **abundance in wealth, i.e. money, possessions**. In other words, the Church of the latter days are given over to serve themselves and Satan through THE SPIRIT OF MAMMON.

**THEY HAVE NOT THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST BUT MAMMON WHICH IS CONTROLLED BY THE SPIRIT OF SATAN. THE MANY MAY SERVE GOD, BUT THEY REMAIN IN BONDAGE TO SATAN AND WILL PERISH IN THEIR SINS. THEY OBVIOUSLY BELIEVE THEY ARE SAVED AND COVERED BY THE BLOOD OF CHRIST, BUT THEY ARE LIVING A LIE, A**



## Christ the Redeemer

**STRONG DELUSION THAT GOD HIMSELF SENDS BECAUSE OF THEIR RANK DISOBEDIENCE TO THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM. THEY REFUSE TO PICK UP THEIR CROSS AND SPIRITUALLY DIE. INSTEAD, THEY FOLLOW THE VERY SAME FALSE PROPHETS THAT JESUS WARNED TO BEWARE OF. THE MAIN THING THIS LATTER-DAY CHURCH OF LAODICEA HAS IN COMMON WITH THE 'MANY' OF MATTHEW 7 AND 2<sup>ND</sup> PETER IS:**

**THEY ALL BELIEVED IN A FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINE. A TEACHING THAT NULLIFIED THE COMMANDS AND SAYINGS OF JESUS ON HOW ONE IS SAVED. THE ESSENTIAL COMMAND TO SEARCH AND FIND. THEY PERVERTED THE DOCTRINE OF REDEMPTION, AND IGNORED ALL THE WARNINGS OF CHRIST AND HIS APOSTLE WRITERS. THEY SPEAK EVIL OF THE WAY OF TRUTH, AND COVERTLY BRING IN THEIR OWN LIBERAL WAYS THAT LEAD TO ETERNAL RUIN AND PUNISHMENT.**

**WITHOUT RECONCILING TO CHRIST, THERE CAN BE NO REPENTANCE.**

**"IF ANY MAN [AGAPE] LOVE NOT THE LORD JESUS CHRIST,  
LET HIM BE ANATHEMA MARANATHA."  
(1 Corinthians 16:22)**

A person CANNOT *agape* love Jesus Christ except it be bestowed upon them by God at the revelation of Jesus Christ, "ANATHEMA MARANATHA" means:

**ACCURSED IN THE COMING JUDGMENT.**

### **9. Redeeming The Purchase.**

The second application of the *Oriental law of kinship* is **to redeem a kinsman's land rights**. We find Satan also was given rights to Earth. Since Christ is 'heir' of all things, this law also applies to the right to dominion of Earth. We will need to go from Genesis to Revelation in order to understand who was to have dominion of Earth, why Satan has it, and what is the outcome of all this.

**"AND GOD SAID, LET US MAKE MAN IN OUR IMAGE,  
AFTER OUR LIKENESS:  
AND LET THEM HAVE DOMINION  
OVER THE FISH OF THE SEA, AND OVER THE FOWL OF THE AIR,  
AND OVER THE CATTLE,  
AND OVER ALL THE EARTH,**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**AND OVER EVERY CREEPING THING THAT CREEPETH UPON THE EARTH."  
(Genesis 1:26)**

One image we should have of God is that HE IS GOD. He who is superior in power and wisdom, having ultimate **dominion** over all that is. Dominion simply means to rule over. IF we perceive God in that image and He created man in His own image, then what image should man have? Would it not be as ruler over what God made for him, to have power and dominion over all the Earth? For that is what God originally decreed for man in his unfallen state, part of the Adamic covenant.

Jesus was called the "second Adam", (1 Cor 15:45). He is to return and take possession of what Adam and Eve lost, dominion over the earth. Notice this event is FUTURE which happens only when the LAST angel of the apocalypse sounds. Jesus overcame Satan's power by the cross, but until the seventh trumpet (Rev 11:15), Satan continues to have **POWER OVER ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD WHICH INCLUDES NOW**. However in order for Christ to return and claim His inheritance, He first must have the legal right to take possession. (This will be shown in the next section in relation to the delay of Christ's return.)

***"This matter is by the decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones: to the intent that the living may know  
THAT THE MOST HIGH RULETH IN THE KINGDOM OF MEN,  
AND GIVETH IT TO WHOMSOEVER HE WILL,  
and setteth up over it the basest of men."***  
(Daniel 4:17)

This verse from Daniel testifies that God the Father has ultimate rule. God has the power to do whatever He wills, whenever He desires because HE IS GOD. But the Scriptures bear out that God does not operate by 'whims' or egotistic notions. Creation also reflects the attributes of God as precise order, pattern of design, and infinite wisdom. The word "KINGDOM" is *malkuw* (mal-koo') which simply means: **dominion**. God gives the right to rule to whosoever He wills. Dominion means to rule over but not necessarily 'ownership'. First, dominion was granted to Adam and Eve. Then, Satan obviously took that right from man because Satan has dominion of death and mankind entered into death through Adam's fall. As long as a person abides IN death, they are IN Satan's kingdom, (Heb 2:14).

***"And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion:  
AND THE DRAGON GAVE HIM HIS POWER,  
AND HIS SEAT, AND GREAT AUTHORITY."***  
(Revelation 13:2)

## Christ the Redeemer

**ALL THE KINGDOMS AND POWER IN THE WORLD WAS DELIVERED TO SATAN (Rev 12:9), AND WHOSOEVER SATAN WILL GIVE THIS POWER TO. SATAN HAD POSSESSION BEFORE THE FIRST COMING OF CHRIST, AND HERE HE OBVIOUSLY CONTINUES TO HAVE IT TILL THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.**

This will be further proven in the next section. The Greek for "SEAT" is *thronos* (thron'-os), which means: **a stately seat; by implying power or a potentate, seat, a throne**. Since Satan has dominion over the kingdoms of earth, then he also has dominion over the spiritual and physical leaders of those kingdoms. **The THRONE of the beast world government is given by SATAN. The United Nations has GREAT AUTHORITY, AND POWER. The UN is made-up of effectively ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE EARTH.** Satan has dominion all the way to the end of the 70<sup>th</sup> week of Daniel, until Christ returns to redeem His rights. To better understand why this is, we will return to the redemption laws of Leviticus chapter 25.

**"THE LAND SHALL NOT BE SOLD FOR EVER:  
FOR THE LAND IS MINE;  
FOR YE ARE STRANGERS AND SOJOURNERS WITH ME."**

**"AND IN ALL THE LAND OF YOUR POSSESSION  
YE SHALL GRANT A REDEMPTION FOR THE LAND."  
(Leviticus 25:23-24)**

The physical aspect of this law is that it applies to the land of Israel and God's chosen people. This law also has a spiritual aspect that it applies to planet Earth and the redemption of Christ. Whatever land an Israelite possesses, he must grant a redemption for his property. The word "GRANT" is *nathan* (naw-than') which means here: **to pay**; and "REDEMPTION" in this verse is *geullah* (gheh-ool-law'), which means: **[to purchase] the right and the object**. In other words, God OWNS Earth, especially the land of Israel, and His people are to pay for their land rights. We basically have the same situation in America. Most people believe they 'own' their property when they paid for it and receive the deed. But in reality, they only purchase certain rights to occupy and use that property. Even though property taxes may be considered technically illegal under the Bill of Rights, try not paying taxes and see what happens. The government claims ultimate right to all land under their jurisdiction. The difference being, God does not 'oppress' His citizens with taxes.

**"IF THY BROTHER BE WAXEN POOR,  
AND HATH SOLD AWAY SOME OF HIS POSSESSION,**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**AND IF ANY OF HIS KIN COME TO REDEEM IT,  
THEN SHALL HE REDEEM THAT WHICH HIS BROTHER SOLD."**

*(Leviticus 25:25)*

The phrase "WAXEN POOR" in Hebrew is *muwk* (mook) which figuratively means: **be impoverished**. Random House defines "impoverished" as: **deprived of vitality**, and "vitality" is LIFE. Adam and Eve WAXED POOR by LOSING SPIRITUAL LIFE and "sold away" their possession —Earth. The term "SOLD AWAY" in Hebrew figuratively means: **to surrender**. By default, Adam and Eve surrendered the right to rule over Earth to Satan.

The Scriptures have already revealed that man cannot redeem himself from the curse of the law, therefore the same applies to his rights of dominion. The reason is, man does not have power over Satan, but Satan has power over man. Modern man 'thinks' he is MASTER of his life and destiny, as well as dominion over the Earth because of his own abilities and arrogance, but 'ability' is not legal right under God's law. The advocates for a one world government believe "might equals right", but God said He will have **them** in derision. Christ demonstrated what POWER over the earth really was, and Jesus proved through Peter's walk on water and giving power to His apostles over sickness and demons, that man is capable of possessing supernatural power.

The word "REDEEM" in verse 25 is *ga'al* (gaw-al'), and in this context means: **to redeem according to the Oriental law of kinship, i.e. to be the next of kin and as such to buy back a relative's property**. We have previously well established that Christ fulfilled all the parameters of the *near kinsman* part of the law of kinship. And, under that law He IS also legally entitled to BUY BACK His near kin's property of planet Earth.

Since that is true, then is their Scriptural evidence that Christ's redemption also included dominion of Earth? Remember, dominion means to rule over.

*"And she brought forth a man child,  
**WHO WAS TO RULE ALL NATIONS**  
with a rod of iron:  
and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne."*  
*(Revelation 12:5)*

*"And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword,  
that with it he should smite the nations:  
**AND HE SHALL RULE THEM WITH A ROD OF IRON:**  
and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God."*  
*(Revelation 19:15)*

*"And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom,  
which shall never be destroyed:*

Christ the Redeemer

**AND THE KINGDOM SHALL NOT BE LEFT  
TO OTHER PEOPLE,**

*but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms,*

**AND IT SHALL STAND FOR EVER."**

*(Daniel 2:44)*

*"I saw in the night visions, and, behold,*

**ONE LIKE THE SON OF MAN**

*came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days,  
and they brought him near before him."*

**"AND THERE WAS GIVEN HIM DOMINION,**

*and glory, and a kingdom, that ALL people, nations, and languages, should  
serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion,*

**WHICH SHALL NOT PASS AWAY,**

**AND HIS KINGDOM THAT WHICH SHALL NOT BE DESTROYED."**

*(Daniel 7:13-14)*

We find total harmony and consistency within these scriptural testimonies. Notice they are all FUTURE TENSE in relation to Christ actually taking possession and control of earth. Until then, Satan continues to have dominion OVER EARTH AND ITS INHABITANTS AND GOVERNMENTS.

**PLEASE UNDERSTAND THE IMPACT OF THAT BIBLICAL FACT. JESUS COMMANDED WE 'WATCH' UNTIL THE END, FOR HIS COMING. 'IF' WE OBEY, WE WILL NOT BE CAUGHT OFF GUARD AND BE CUT ASUNDER. BUT IF WE ARE NOT WATCHING, WE REMAIN CHILDREN OF DARKNESS, UNDER THE POWER OF SATAN AND HIS ARMY OF FALLEN ANGELS AND DEMON SPIRITS.**

**"AFTERWARD**

**[AFTER CHRIST'S GATHERING OF THE ELECT]**

**CAME ALSO THE OTHER VIRGINS, SAYING, LORD, LORD, OPEN TO US."**

**"BUT HE ANSWERED AND SAID,**

**VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU, I KNOW YOU NOT."**

**"WATCH THEREFORE,**

**FOR YE KNOW NEITHER THE DAY NOR THE HOUR WHEREIN**

**THE SON OF MAN COMETH."**

*(Matthew 25:11-13)*

To 'WATCH' means a whole lot more than watching the news. It also means possessing a **mental AND spiritual awakening** that comes from understanding Scriptural DOCTRINE that is to guide us into the TRUTH of

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

salvation via the Holy Spirit of God, (1 Tim 4:16; Jn 16:13). It was the guidance of the Holy Spirit that the five foolish virgins failed to have in Jesus' parable, (Mat 25:1-13).

***"The Father loveth the Son,  
AND HATH GIVEN ALL THINGS INTO HIS HAND."  
(John 3:35)***

This verse verifies that God retains the ultimate power of rule over all things. Notice the change in tense. God "has given" (past tense) power of all things to His Son Jesus. This means 'ownership', as a son is heir to his father's property. IT DOES NOT SAY THAT JESUS HAS TAKEN POSSESSION OF ALL THINGS. Jesus remains in heaven with His Father TILL the time appointed, then comes to take possession and dominion of all things. The word 'HAND' is a metaphor for POWER. God gave right of rule first to Adam and Eve, who then surrendered it by default to Satan. Finally Christ, a legal near kinsman to Adam, both legally re-purchased the rights to and inherited ownership. However, we have discovered that redemption of the land is yet complete. There is a parameter of the law we have yet to apply. We will later find why Old and New Testament verses say that Christ returned to heaven "UNTIL".

There are three Biblical FACTS the secular world and many Christians have yet to understand about redemption: (1) The legal aspect of Jesus coming into the world to redeem it from Satan by crucifixion almost 2000 years ago; (2) The legal application of Christ's entire redemptive work; (3) The legal parameters of Christ's return to redeem His rights. One of the acts of restoring all things is where Christ returns to restore property rights of the Earth back to Himself and to Israel. UNTIL then, it is NECESSARY that He be in heaven with His Father.

Since things are to be 'restored' only when Christ returns, that verifies that UNTIL that time, we remain under the domain and control of Satan and his hierarchy. The repair of the BREACH is yet complete. Jesus warned that there would be a conspiracy by certain wealthy and Pharisaic Jews to take DOMINION of earth for themselves. This is a part of Bible prophecy that FEW dare to speak of because the Luciferian watchdogs will instantly 'demonize' such as *anti-Semites*.

Jesus gives a parable in Matthew 21:33-41 which relates to the gathering of 'fruit' (regenerate souls) to the kingdom of God. We will begin when the landowner (God) has sent His Son [Christ] into the vineyard (world).

***"BUT WHEN THE HUSBANDMEN SAW THE SON,  
THEY SAID AMONG THEMSELVES,***

## Christ the Redeemer

**THIS IS THE HEIR;  
COME, LET US KILL HIM,  
AND LET US SEIZE ON HIS INHERITANCE."**  
(Matthew 21:38)

The 'husbandmen' represent the religious Pharisees of Israel. Now compare what Jesus says here with what we have learned. Jesus as the Son of God, like any first born son, is the legal heir to his Father's estate. In relation to Christ, his inheritance is all things, our *KOSMOS*. It is the heavens and the EARTH that Christ returns to claim. It is **dominion** over the nations the Jews have always expected their Messiah to come and bring, (Acts 1:6). According to this parable, the Pharisees have Jesus put to death so THEY can take what rightfully belongs to him: WORLD DOMINION. IN THE END, CHRIST TAKES DOMINION FROM THEM, THE BEAST, THE FALSE PROPHET, AND THE DRAGON (SATAN).

**"... ALSO THE ROBBERS OF THY PEOPLE  
SHALL EXALT THEMSELVES  
TO ESTABLISH THE VISION; BUT THEY SHALL FALL."**  
(Daniel 11:14)

The "vision" referred to is described in Daniel 9:24, TO MAKE RECONCILIATION, TO BRING IN EVERLASTING RIGHTEOUSNESS. Is this the same as the "restitution" by the Messiah. It must be because it includes the city of Jerusalem. These attempt to bring in a feigned righteousness that is FORCED upon the people in the name of religious "tolerance", peace and security. Notice who these ROBBERS are —Daniel's people. The word "ROBBERS" is *periyts* (per-eets'), which means: **violent ones, tyrants, destroyers, greedy extortionists, thieves**. The root word means: **to directly or indirectly break down, to compel or urge**.

These are not just corrupt people who steal for gain, but are self-appointed lords of the earth that James also warns of. They oppress and compel people to pay income tax by fraud, (James 5). They gradually break down all government systems and take away their RIGHTS, and ultimately property rights (Micah 2:2). They "EXALT" themselves. They raise themselves in rank, honor, and POWER. They are the honorable of the earth, the philanthropists who attempt TO ESTABLISH THE VISION. The Jewish International bankers with their Gentile political and industrial puppets are the DESTROYERS of nations. They are attempting to establish WORLD PEACE by WORLD DOMINATION. And it is the DRAGON who gives them their power and GREAT authority. Does this sound farfetched?

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

*"And David saith, LET THEIR [Robbers of Israel]*

**TABLE [BANK LOANS]**

**BE MADE A SNARE, AND A TRAP, AND A STUMBLINGBLOCK,  
AND A RECOMPENSE UNTO THEM:"**

**"NOW IF THE FALL OF THEM [THE ROBBERS]  
BE THE RICHES OF THE WORLD,  
AND THE DIMINISHING OF THEM THE RICHES OF THE GENTILES;  
HOW MUCH MORE THEIR FULNESS?"**

*(Romans 11:9-12)*

Read this carefully and check the Greek here, because it is EXACTLY what is happening behind the scenes of governments, the INTERNATIONAL BANKS and the United Nations WORLD BANK. The word "TABLE" can be very misleading. It is *Strong's* no. G5132, *trapeza* (trap'-ed-zah). Which figuratively means: **a broker's office for loans at interest, a bank!** The word "SNARE" means: **a strategic trick**; and "TRAP" means: **to destroy**; and "STUMBLINGBLOCK" means: **to trap or cause to fall**.

These Zionist robbers strategically raise themselves up in control of the world's money supply by setting traps and destroying the financial foundation of nations. God allows them to attempt to establish the VISION of Jewish world dominion for a time in order to break down the nations, (Jer 51:19-20). Then catches them in their own trap, THEY SHALL FALL. This is covered more in detail in the study "*The Coming Tribulation*", Part 2.

**"AND THE NATIONS WERE ANGRY, AND THY WRATH IS COME,  
AND THE TIME OF THE DEAD, THAT THEY SHOULD BE JUDGED,  
AND THAT THOU SHOULDEST GIVE REWARD UNTO THY SERVANTS THE  
PROPHETS, AND TO THE SAINTS, AND THEM THAT FEAR THY NAME,  
SMALL AND GREAT;  
AND SHOULDEST DESTROY THEM WHICH DESTROY THE EARTH."**  
*(Revelation 11:18)*

This is why Christ MUST return and take dominion. Satan has one purpose, to DESTROY AS MUCH OF GOD'S CREATION AS HE POSSIBLY CAN, (Isa 54:16). TO DECEIVE AND TAKE AS MANY SOULS AS HE CAN WITH HIM INTO THE ETERNAL LAKE OF FIRE. Perhaps that is why Satan has the name "DESTROYER", (Ex 12:23; 1 Cor 10:9-10). That must be why Christ has to come and redeem the land, TO KEEP IT FROM BEING UTTERLY DESTROYED, **BECAUSE GENETIC ALTERATION OF FOOD, ANIMALS AND MANKIND IS DESTROYING GOD'S CREATED EARTH. THE SAME CONDITIONS AS IN THE DAYS OF NOAH ARE CURRENTLY TAKING PLACE, (Mat 24:37).**



## Christ the Redeemer

Remember that Satan said that he not only has DOMINION over the kingdoms of the world, but also that he may GIVE that dominion to whomsoever. Satan shall give control to the Beast and the False Prophet.

We are now going to prove that Christ also has this privilege, as given by His Father. We find that Christ redeems the land and gives dominion back to man as God originally ordained it.

**"BLESSED ARE THE MEEK:  
FOR THEY SHALL INHERIT THE EARTH."**

*(Mat 5:5)*

The word "MEEK" is *praus* (prah-ooce') which, in this context means: **humble**. From a word study on 'humble' in the scriptures, we find it means those whose spirit is broken and crushed by the chastisement of God upon the "narrow way", (Mat 7:13-14). God only gives His GRACE (salvation) to the humble, (James 4:6).

**"When men are cast down, then thou shalt say, There is lifting up;  
AND HE [GOD] SHALL SAVE THE HUMBLE PERSON."**

*(Job 22:29)*

**"THE MEEK WILL HE GUIDE IN JUDGMENT:  
AND THE MEEK WILL HE TEACH HIS WAY."**

*(Psalm 25:9)*

God's WAY is the way of judgment that happens in the NARROW WAY. Notice it is ONLY the MEEK that God teaches HIS WAY. It is only the HUMBLE that God saves. Therefore it is only the true regenerated Christian who reckoned himself to his redeemer by bending their knee to OBEY Christ's commands who will inherit the Earth. Christ, as the second Adam, must now reclaim that right for mankind. You do not 'inherit' something except you be given 'rights' to it. Matthew 5:5 verifies that man lost dominion of earth.

**"HE THAT OVERCOMETH  
SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS;  
AND I WILL BE HIS GOD, AND HE SHALL BE MY SON."**

*(Revelation 21:7)*

**"AND HE THAT OVERCOMETH,  
AND KEEPETH MY WORKS UNTO THE END,  
TO HIM WILL I GIVE POWER OVER THE NATIONS:"**

**"AND HE SHALL RULE THEM WITH A ROD OF IRON;  
AS THE VESSELS OF A POTTER SHALL THEY BE BROKEN TO SHIVERS:"**

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

**EVEN AS I RECEIVED OF MY FATHER."**  
***(Revelation 2:26-27)***

First we saw where Christ shall be given all things, (Jn 3:35), and rule with a rod of iron. Then we have the verification that Christ is going to give the rights to all things to the OVERCOMERS. They, like Christ, are to RULE THE NATIONS OF EARTH WITH A ROD OF IRON. Christ will be their GOD, and they will be His sons, THE SONS OF CHRIST! And what makes one an over comer?

**"FOR WHATSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD**  
**OVERCOMETH THE WORLD:**  
**AND THIS IS THE VICTORY THAT OVERCOMETH THE WORLD,**  
**EVEN OUR FAITH."**  
***(1 John 5:4)***

The "over comers" are those BORN OF GOD, the true sons of God, those who were REDEEMED by Christ and have the *agape* love of God bestowed upon them. They are they who humbled themselves and **obeyed** the sayings of Jesus. They entered the strait gate and journeyed the narrow way unto LIFE by an **unfeigned faith** that was TRIED in the fire of God's word, (1Pet 1:7; Jer 23:29). They took hold of THEIR cross and followed Jesus into the baptism of death and the likeness of His resurrection. They are the MEEK, and THEY shall inherit the earth. Except one REPENTS, all who pervert and corrupt the Earth AND THE TRUTH OF THE GOSPEL undergo the second death and are cast into the lake of fire along with their father Satan and his angels, (1 Pet 4:17-18; Mat 25:41).

**"In whom ye also trusted, AFTER THAT ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also AFTER THAT ye believed, YE WERE SEALED WITH THAT HOLY SPIRIT OF PROMISE,"**

**"WHICH IS THE EARNEST OF OUR INHERITANCE**  
**UNTIL**  
**THE REDEMPTION OF THE PURCHASED POSSESSION,**  
**UNTO THE PRAISE OF HIS GLORY."**  
***(Ephesians 1:13-14)***

**"AND GRIEVE NOT THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD, WHEREBY YE ARE SEALED**  
**UNTO**  
**THE DAY OF REDEMPTION."**  
***(Ephesians 4:30)***

These verses testify to the legality of Christ's work of redemption and the validity of the application of the *Oriental law of kinship*. The word "SEALED" is *sphragizo* (sfrag-id'-zo), and in this context means: **to stamp with a**

## Christ the Redeemer

**signet or private mark for security or preservation, to attest to.** The root meaning is: **a mark of genuineness, a protection from misappropriation.** In a legal application it represents: **'official' authorization of approval by the one to whom the seal represents.** The Holy Spirit proceeded forth from God, and is sent to those who Christ selects, (Jn 15:26). The mission of the Holy Spirit upon earth is for reproof of sin, righteousness, and judgment, (Jn 16:8, 13); to guide us into the truth and show us things to come (prophecy). When regeneration takes place, the Holy Spirit is "renewed" for another purpose (Titus 3:5): to seal that individual UNTIL the day of redemption.

The renewal of the Holy Spirit is another legality of the *kinsman-redeemer* law. The word "EARNEST" is *arrhabon* (ar-hrab-ohn'), which means: **a pledge, part of the purchase-money or property given in advance as security for the rest.** This has the same application as "money in earnest" in any formal sale of property. Notice that both "SEALED" and "EARNEST" relate to SECURITY. The application of 'security' is used as money in earnest of legal transactions, a partial pre-payment. Random House defines it: **something given or deposited as surety for the fulfillment of a promise or an obligation, the payment of a debt, etc.** God gives a number of PROMISES to those who become His TRUE SONS. Those promises are not idle statements, but become God's legal obligation, just as we have a legal obligation to Him through Christ. The "NEW COVENANT" is a legally binding contract between God and the believer who enters into that agreement through Christ the mediator. In fact the term "TESTAMENT" is Strong's no. G1242, *diatheke* (dee-ath-ay'-kay), which means: **a covenant, a legally binding contract.** The revelation of Jesus Christ (Jn 14:21-23; 1 Pet 1:13), is THE ONLY way God chose to reveal the true essence of this covenant to an individual. If accepted, God concludes that experiential visitation by placing His ownership SEAL within us. The "earnest" of our redemption and inheritance. There is nothing complex about all this, it is just lost in the false teachings of modern Christianity.

The phrase "PURCHASED POSSESSION" in the Greek is *peripoiesis* (per-ee-poy'-ay-sis), which simply means: **acquisition.** It is when Christ returns and literally takes possession for that He has already PAID FOR. That application of "redemption" is like a claim check. You go to a department store and purchase an item that was advertised for a certain price, but the store is out of stock and cannot deliver at that time. They issue you a coupon or 'claim check' that is their seal of approval that you have purchased and are entitled to that item. When they have the item ready, you return to the store and REDEEM your claim check for that you have legal right to possess. That may be an over simplified example, nevertheless Christ's return has the same basic legal application in view of redemption. The "PURCHASED POSSESSION" refers to those who were, in truth, REDEEMED.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Notice there is the delay between the sealing of the Holy Spirit and *the day of redemption*. This confirms what we saw in Luke 21 and Matthew 24.

### **"BIND UP THE TESTIMONY, SEAL THE LAW AMONG MY DISCIPLES."**

*(Isaiah 8:16)*

This is an interesting Old Testament verse of scripture that is actually the Lord's command that His disciples be sealed until the day of redemption. The word "DISCIPLES" is *limmuwd* (lim-mood'), which means the same as its New Testament counterpart, which is: **instructed [one], accustomed to, learned or taught**. But the root word is *islamad* (law-mad'), which means: **to goad, i.e. by implying to teach with the rod as an Oriental incentive, diligent, expert, instruct, learn, or skilful teaching**. We find here another reference to "Oriental". The Japanese have an ancient custom for learning that is even used today in training some of their corporate executives. If they make a mistake during training, they are struck on the back by a bamboo rod.

A 'goad' is used to prod cattle. Something that encourages, drives, or stimulates to go a certain direction or WAY. Next, notice what "DISCIPLE" means. He is NOT some 'convert' with casual knowledge, but implies one that is diligent in search for knowing truth. One that is **skilfully taught** by rebuke and discipline. One taught doctrine by God Himself, (Isa 28:29).

The phrase "BIND UP" is another legal term that is interesting. The dictionary defines it: **to unite by any legal or moral tie; to place under [legal] obligation or compulsion; to appear as a witness**. There is only ONE witness we are to strive for: to **set to his seal that God is true**, (Jn 3:33). To know absolute that God does in fact exist, and to experientially know Him and SEE His Son via revelation when true regeneration occurs, (1 Pet 1:7,13; Jn 14:21-23). At that point faith "IN" Christ ENDS, and becomes the faith "OF" Christ. In this verse the word "SEAL" is *chatham* (khaw-tham'), which essentially means: **to bring to a close, to make an end, to mark, to stop**. And what makes an end to the law? The righteousness of Christ, His *agape* love, (Rom 10:4). We find that the story of redemption is far more than just a 'story' or a simple act of reconciliation, but is **a legally binding fulfillment of the laws of God through and only through the agape love that is IN Christ Jesus**. We cannot *agape* love except we possess that type of love which can only be bestowed by God upon the human soul.

There was a lot more that went down at the cross than we might first think. So the main question on the forefront of the Christian mind today is: **"When will Christ come and redeem His Church?"** This question of itself causes much debate and division.

## Christ the Redeemer

It appears that Christianity has fallen into the same trap of tradition and false teachings as Israel at Christ's first coming, (Luke 12:56). Even though the time code of Daniel chapter 9 calculates to the exact day of the manifestation of their Messiah, by their ignorance and conceit, they rejected Jesus as their Messiah. They were blind to the truth of God's prophecies by which understanding only comes via the Holy Spirit.

Since modern Christianity as a whole claims we "cannot know" when Christ returns, then why would our Lord give us so many signs and TIME CODES that ALL relate to His return? Why did He say His WISE servants will know, but His foolish servants will not know or be watching? Why did Jesus give us the parables of the Fig Tree of Matthew 24 and the 10 Virgins of Matthew 25 and what do they mean? Why did the Apostle Paul say the Church of Thessalonians perfectly knew the "times and seasons" in reference to the *rapture* and the Day of the Lord? What IF you did know when Christ will come (at least the year), what then? What difference would it really make to YOU? What awareness will you have prior to REDEMPTION DAY? Are you (IN TRUTH) SEALED by the Holy Spirit of promise and ARE WATCHING? Do you know what to watch for? These are very crucial questions indeed.

### 10. Redemption Day

In the last section we touched upon the "times of restitution" and how it relates to redemption. We want to return to this because the return of Christ is His final act of the *Oriental Law of Kinship*. There are two major questions concerning this from a legal perspective: (1) When may Christ return and redemption occur in accordance to Old Testament law; and (2) Why MUST heaven receive Christ for an appointed time which causes delay?

It may surprise you to see there are a number of verses that gives great insight to this. Not only in view of the legal aspect, but more importantly to know WHEN His return occurs in relation to signs and sequence of events. We are not specifically going to explore the prophetic time codes of the Bible here, which are deeply covered in *The Times of the Sign*, but what we want to look at is **the legality of Christ's return in relation to prophetic law and promises of Scripture.**

**"AND THEN SHALL THEY SEE THE SON OF MAN COMING IN A CLOUD WITH  
POWER AND GREAT GLORY.  
AND WHEN THESE THINGS BEGIN TO COME TO PASS, THEN LOOK UP,  
AND LIFT UP YOUR HEADS;  
FOR YOUR REDEMPTION DRAWETH NIGH."  
(Luke 21:28)**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

The word for "REDEMPTION" here is *apolutrosis* (ap-ol-oo'-tro-sis), which means: **ransom in full, Christian salvation, deliverance**. The word "ransom" means: **the redemption price or payment**; and the word "full" means: **complete, entire, fulfilled**. In other words: **Christ's coming COMPLETES the final fulfillment of all parameters of the Oriental law of kinship**. This also begins the restitution of all things. He will gather together his own, destroy those who destroy the Earth, bind Satan, take dominion over the kingdoms of the world, and restore Israel. God apparently uses the BEAST to prepare the world for Christ's coming. This brings us to the last parameter of the law of kinship:

***"THEN LET HIM COUNT THE YEARS OF THE SALE THEREOF,  
AND RESTORE THE OVERPLUS UNTO THE MAN TO WHOM HE SOLD IT;  
THAT HE MAY RETURN UNTO HIS POSSESSION."***

***"BUT IF HE BE NOT ABLE TO RESTORE IT TO HIM,  
[CHRIST'S DELAY]  
THEN THAT WHICH IS SOLD  
SHALL REMAIN IN THE HAND OF HIM  
THAT HATH BOUGHT IT UNTIL THE YEAR OF JUBILEE:  
AND IN THE JUBILEE IT SHALL GO OUT,  
AND HE SHALL RETURN UNTO HIS POSSESSION."***  
***[RETURN OF CHRIST]  
(Leviticus 25:27-28)***

We will see that heaven MUST receive Christ UNTIL the restitution begins. Obviously when Christ comes, he is returning "unto his possession". This delay exposes the *doctrine of Imminence* totally as FALSE DOCTRINE, just as Jesus and Paul warned. Christ MAY NOT return for his church at any moment because He Himself gave us the signs and sequence of events that lead to His return which is also in accordance to law. **CHRIST'S RETURN IS NOT ONLY FULFILLMENT OF MANY PROPHECIES, BUT IS ALSO A LEGAL ISSUE. HIS RETURN IS EVEN A PROVISION OF THE LAW**, (we will explore this later). This passage of Scripture gives us a legal perspective why Christ did not take control of Earth during His first advent. It includes the DELAY, and legally establishes His right to "RETURN UNTO HIS POSSESSION".

At that time, Jesus could not pay the TIME left of man's six day labor fulfillment. Therefore, He could NOT restore the dominion of earth because according to the 7000 year prophetic doctrine, man must labor six days (6000 years) under the curse before entering his rest (Ex 20:9, Heb 4:8-9). From Adam to Christ's first advent had only been four days (4000 years), therefore there were two days (2000 years) remaining to be fulfilled BEFORE Christ may return to redeem His claims. Man was, and still is UNDER THE

## Christ the Redeemer

BONDAGE OF DEATH AND THE POWER OF SATAN. There were many prophecies yet to be fulfilled to allow for the "times of the Gentiles", and to "gather together" His Church. Since Jesus could not restore the kingdoms of Earth at His first advent, then (according to *torah* law) dominion must REMAIN under "HIM THAT BOUGHT IT", who is Satan until Jubilee.

The word 'JUBILEE' is *yowbel* (yo-bale'), (given as law also in Leviticus 25), which essentially means: **a sounding of trumpets, a festival**. Some scholars claim this festival is the only one Jesus has yet to fulfill as prophetic law. Jesus appeared to Israel as the Messiah when He began to be age thirty which most likely was a sabbatical year, (Luke 3:1,23). *The feast of unleavened bread* was fulfilled by His crucifixion and resurrection. *The feast of first fruits* was fulfilled with the baptism of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost. Christ's return may fulfill *the feast of trumpets* and *the day of atonement*, which announces the beginning of Jubilee, (Lev 25:9-10). Note it is the last trumpet when He takes possession of the kingdoms of this world, (Rev 11:15). In Genesis we first find the promise of a Messiah:

**"AND I WILL PUT ENMITY [HOSTILITY]**  
**BETWEEN THEE [THE SERPENT] AND THE WOMAN, [ISRAEL]**  
**AND BETWEEN THY [SERPENT'S] SEED**  
**AND HER SEED; [THE COMING MESSIAH]**  
**IT SHALL BRUISE THY HEAD, AND THOU SHALT BRUISE HIS HEEL."**  
**(Genesis 3:15)**

This is the first prophetic reference to a Messiah. Hebrew for 'ENMITY' is 'eybah (ay-baw'), which basically means: **hostility**. The root word is 'ayab (aw-yab'), and means: **an opposite tribe or party, an enemy**. The 'WOMAN' in the spiritual sense represents Israel, and prophetically it represents the coming of a Messiah born of a virgin woman. Notice that the MAN is left out of this prophecy. Something we explored in earlier Sections, where the Messiah could not be born of the fallen spirit of the male.

Note the significance that the promise of a Messiah was given at the same time the serpent was cursed by God. Then, we next find the RETURN OF CHRIST was foretold in Deuteronomy as a provision of *Torah* law.

**"And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee,**  
**the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee,**  
**and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations,**  
**whither the LORD thy God hath driven thee,"**

**"And shalt return unto the LORD thy God, and shalt obey his**  
**voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children,**  
**with all thine heart, and with all thy soul;"**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

### **"THAT THEN**

**THE LORD THY GOD WILL TURN THY CAPTIVITY,  
AND HAVE COMPASSION UPON THEE,**

### **AND WILL RETURN**

**AND GATHER THEE FROM ALL THE NATIONS,**

***whither the LORD thy God hath scattered thee."***

***"If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the LORD thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee:"***

***"And the LORD thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers."***

***(Deuteronomy 30:1-5)***

This passage of Scripture is part of the old Abrahamic promise known as the *Palestinian Covenant* that God made with Israel. This covenant is God's agreement concerning their occupation of His land, (Jer 2:7). This CURSE is again a separation from having legal possession and occupation of that land due to disobedience and apostasy. Note the order of content here because we find it repeated all through prophetic Scripture. There are **5** major conditions here, and again 5 is the number for redemption.

1. Because of the curse of this covenant, God had Israel driven off their land and into other nations;
2. The Jewish people as a whole will repent and turn back to God in obedience;
3. THEN the Lord Himself promises to RETURN;
4. The Lord Himself gathers them out from the other nations;
5. The Lord brings them back to their land and bless them with GOOD.

**This covenant is still in effect.** Notice that this promise comes as a final act upon Israel. God foretells He has 'set' them to first undergo the blessings and then the curse, but it is sometime after this the Lord promises TO RETURN and gather them and bring them to their own land in a REGENERATE state, (Duet 30:6). **If they have to be gathered from all the nations where they are scattered, then that implies they must NOT be in their land when the Lord returns!** Up until that time they are still under God's curses, and cannot be in permanent possession of their land because according to Levitical law, the land must remain in control of Satan till Christ returns to redeem. That is why his flag flies over the land now, displaying the "STAR OF SATURN". (Amos 5:26; Acts 7:43)



## Christ the Redeemer

The words 'TURN' and 'RETURN' are the same Hebrew word *shuwb* (shoob). This word is used 1,339 times in the popular *King James Bible* for various applications including 'conversion' to God. However, in this context 'TURN' means **to reverse their bondage from serving other nations**; and 'RETURN' relates to **the second coming of Christ**. You cannot 'return' except you have been there before. This interpretation will be self evident and confirmed in the following references. This means that the second coming of Christ is actually "prophetic law" and a legal issue. Not only a legal issue in relation to fulfillment of the *Oriental Law of Kinship*, but also as a parameter of law based upon the *Palestinian Covenant*. Now compare Deuteronomy 30 to Jeremiah 12:

***"Thus saith the LORD against all mine evil neighbours, that touch the inheritance which I have caused my people Israel to inherit;  
BEHOLD, I WILL PLUCK THEM OUT OF THEIR LAND,  
AND PLUCK OUT THE HOUSE OF JUDAH FROM AMONG THEM."  
"AND IT SHALL COME TO PASS,  
AFTER  
THAT I HAVE PLUCKED THEM OUT  
I WILL RETURN,  
AND HAVE COMPASSION ON THEM, AND WILL BRING THEM AGAIN,  
EVERY MAN TO HIS HERITAGE, AND EVERY MAN TO HIS LAND."  
(Jeremiah 12:14-15, King James Version)***

Read this prophecy carefully and compare it to what we previously read in Deuteronomy. It is in complete harmony with a great many Scriptures of tribulation Israel that is not being taught. [Perhaps because this promise of the Lord's return is omitted in the modern Bible versions.] This concept is covered more in-depth in the study *The Coming Tribulation*. The common teaching in Bible prophecy today is that God is in the process of permanently gathering the Jews back to their land to rebuild the nation Israel since 1948. Unfortunately, this is contrary to sound Bible doctrine. The Israel in Palestine today is the result of the rich men of the Earth working through the ZIONIST MOVEMENT under the control of the House of Rothschild. Could they be the last 80 year (Fig Tree) generation of Psalm 90 that is in utter apostasy and shall be 'cut-off' and made to flee the land in accordance to Deuteronomy 30?

A primary goal of the Zionist movement is to establish Israel back into their homeland as God promised, except without Jesus Christ the true Messiah, (Daniel 11:14). We find conclusive Scriptural evidence that the final ingathering of Jews back to their homeland does not take place till AFTER and ONLY AFTER Christ touches down upon the Mt. of Olives.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Again, a requirement of law. Note the sequence and how it compares to Deuteronomy 30:

1. The Lord drives out both the Jews and Palestinians out of the land;
2. The Lord promises to RETURN;
3. The Lord Himself gathers Israel back to their land after His return.

Jeremiah says it is God who first 'plucks' both the evil neighbors [Palestinians] and also Judah (Jews) out of Israel's land of inheritance. In Deuteronomy, God said it is He that will scatter His people among the nations. The word 'PLUCKED' is *nathash*, which means: **to tear away, destroy, forsake, pluck up by the roots, pull up, root out utterly**. Next, it is very clear that it is AFTER the land has been emptied of ALL inhabitants that the Lord RETURNS and THEN gathers them permanently. To establish this concept further, we will look at further Scripture that relate directly to Christ's second coming in view of this covenant based law.

***"For thus saith the Lord GOD; BEHOLD, I, EVEN I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out."***

***"AS A SHEPHERD SEEKETH OUT HIS FLOCK  
IN THE DAY THAT HE IS AMONG HIS SHEEP  
THAT ARE SCATTERED;***

***SO WILL I SEEK OUT MY SHEEP, AND WILL DELIVER THEM OUT OF ALL  
PLACES WHERE THEY HAVE BEEN SCATTERED  
IN THE CLOUDY AND DARK DAY."***  
***(Ezekiel 34:11-12)***

God refers to the "day of the Lord" as a CLOUDY AND DARK DAY, (Joel 2:2, Zeph 1:15, Amos 5:20, Zech 14:6). Here the Lord says He will search out His own sheep and bring them back to their land of Israel. When does He say He does this? When He is AMONG them that ARE SCATTERED. WHEN are they scattered? In the CLOUDY AND DARK DAY, the DAY OF THE LORD, which is the TIME OF THE GENTILES, (Ezek 30:3), the time of Jacob's trouble, (Jer 30:7).

***"Thus saith the Lord GOD;  
IN THE DAY THAT I SHALL HAVE CLEANSED YOU  
FROM ALL YOUR INIQUITIES  
I WILL ALSO CAUSE YOU TO DWELL IN THE CITIES,  
AND THE WASTES SHALL BE BUILDED."***  
***(Ezekiel 36:33)***

## Christ the Redeemer

What is THE DAY of cleansing? Most assuredly the TRIBULATION of the nation Israel. Notice this is all future tense and "to dwell in the cities" comes AFTER this cleansing. 'WASTES' means: **destroyed, made desolate without inhabitants**. This is also confirmed by Isaiah:

**"AND HE SAID, GO, AND TELL THIS PEOPLE,  
[PRESENT THE GOSPEL]  
HEAR YE INDEED, BUT UNDERSTAND NOT;  
AND SEE YE INDEED, BUT PERCEIVE NOT."**

**"MAKE THE HEART OF THIS PEOPLE FAT, AND MAKE THEIR EARS HEAVY,  
AND SHUT THEIR EYES;  
LEST THEY SEE WITH THEIR EYES, AND HEAR WITH THEIR EARS, AND  
UNDERSTAND WITH THEIR HEART, AND CONVERT, AND BE HEALED."**

**"THEN SAID I, LORD, HOW LONG? [IS ISRAEL BLINDED]  
AND HE ANSWERED,**

**UNTIL  
THE CITIES BE WASTED WITHOUT INHABITANT, AND THE HOUSES  
WITHOUT MAN, AND THE LAND BE UTTERLY DESOLATE,"**

**"AND THE LORD HAVE REMOVED MEN FAR AWAY,  
AND THERE BE A GREAT FORSAKING IN THE MIDST OF THE LAND."**  
*(Isaiah 6:9-12)*

This passage from Isaiah is referenced in John 12:40. This is where God decreed to blind the House of Jacob, (i.e. Jewish Israel) in reference to the true identity of Jesus Christ and His presentation of the Gospel message. The word 'LEST' means: **for fear that; so that one should not**, (*Random House Dictionary*). The key here are verses 11 and 12. How long are the Jews to be under this spiritual blindness to Jesus as Messiah and His Gospel? Then it says: **TILL THE LAND IS LAYING WASTE WITHOUT ANY INHABITANT**, which is the opposite of repopulation. One may argue and say that was the case BEFORE 1948 when Israel became a recognized nation again. Yes, but was their spiritual blindness removed and they recognize Jesus as their Messiah? No, they remain in spiritual blindness and rejection. Is the land and houses empty of people and in waste? No, obviously not, **but it will be**. This brings us back to the initial question: the delay of Christ's return, which we will now consider.

**"I WILL GO AND RETURN TO MY PLACE, [HEAVEN]  
TILL  
THEY ACKNOWLEDGE THEIR OFFENCE, AND SEEK MY FACE:**

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

**IN THEIR AFFLICTION THEY WILL SEEK ME EARLY."**

*(Hosea 5:15)*

**"WHOM THE HEAVEN MUST RECEIVE**

**UNTIL**

**THE TIMES OF RESTITUTION OF ALL THINGS,**  
**WHICH GOD HATH SPOKEN BY THE MOUTH OF ALL HIS HOLY PROPHETS**  
**SINCE THE WORLD BEGAN."**

*(Acts 3:21)*

How much more obvious can Hosea be? These are companion verses found in both the Old and New Testaments. The context is Christ's return after a delay between His first and second advents. Note the object here is WHEN He is to return which is ultimately when the 'restitution' of all things is to begin. The Greek root words for 'RESTITUTION' mean: **to reconstitute (in health, home or organization), restore again, to complete and set down permanently.** This is the final fulfillment of the *Oriental Law of Kinship*. The promise of God to Israel to restore them permanently in their God ordained land and bless them as a nation through their Messiah —Christ Jesus. When does this happen? After Christ fulfills His appointed time in heaven.

Hosea reveals that His delay ends when: **THEY REPENT OF THEIR BLINDNESS AND SEEK AFTER THE LORD EARLY (DILIGENTLY).** And we will see this is to take place AFTER the Beast of Revelation invades and empties their land. The Biblical time codes also reveal how long the delay is. We will pick up where Hosea left off:

**"COME, AND LET US [ISRAEL] RETURN UNTO THE LORD:  
FOR HE HATH TORN, AND HE WILL HEAL US; HE HATH SMITTEN,  
AND HE WILL BIND US UP."**

**"AFTER TWO DAYS WILL HE REVIVE US:  
IN THE THIRD DAY HE WILL RAISE US UP,  
AND WE SHALL LIVE IN HIS SIGHT."**

**"THEN SHALL WE KNOW, IF WE FOLLOW ON TO KNOW THE LORD:  
HIS GOING FORTH IS PREPARED AS THE MORNING;  
AND HE SHALL COME UNTO US AS THE RAIN,  
AS THE LATTER AND FORMER RAIN UNTO THE EARTH."**  
*(Hosea 6:1-3)*

This time code is unlocked by the time code 'key': **a day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years is as a day,** (Psalm 84:10, 90:4, 2 Pet 3:8). Hebrew for 'REVIVE' means: **restore.**

## Christ the Redeemer

By this, the restitution of Israel (Christ's return) MAY ONLY come **AFTER** 2000 years (two days) ends, after the third thousand has begun. The question then becomes when do we begin the count? This is explored more thoroughly in the time code study. But the point here is to identify and confirm that the return of Christ occurs when the Jews as a people return to God [in truth] through the Lord that bought us, because God can only be honored through His Son, (John 5:23).

Notice that Israel returns to God AFTER He has TORN and SMITTEN them. Are they torn and smitten now? No, some of them (the Zionist Jews) are in their land struggling against their evil neighbors. The word 'TORN' is *taraph*, which means: **to pluck off or pull to pieces**; and 'SMITTEN' is *nakah*, which is: **to strike severely, kill, punish, slaughter, wound**. Remember, the Lord said He will PLUCK them out of their land. After this God HEALS them and BINDS them up, which in Hebrew means they will be **made whole** and **governed**. They cannot be governed as a whole except they are ALL together as a nation.

*"In my Father's house are many mansions:  
if it were not so, I would have told you.  
**I GO TO PREPARE A PLACE FOR YOU.**  
[CHRIST RETURNS TO HEAVEN DURING THE CHURCH AGE]*

*"And if I go and prepare a place for you,  
**I WILL COME AGAIN,**  
**AND RECEIVE YOU UNTO MYSELF;**  
**THAT WHERE I AM, THERE YE MAY BE ALSO.**  
(John 14:2-3)*

This is another companion verse to Hosea 5:15 and Acts 3:21. Even though Jesus is directing this statement directly to His Christian disciples, it may equally apply to Jewish Israel as well. We will see when Jesus returns He will "gather together" His elect (rapture His Church) and later re-gather the Jews out of the nations they have been driven, and out of apostasy to fulfill the Abrahamic and Palestinian covenants. The delay between Christ's first and second advents, according to prophetic signs and time codes, should be approximately 2000 years which is also indicated by the early Church thousand year day doctrine. This delay was built-in to God's prophetic plan before the foundation of the world.

Thus we have seen how the plan of God establishes a number of legal parameters that allow for redemption of mankind and to reclaim the dominion of Earth. We need to continue to look at HOW ISRAEL'S BLINDNESS relates to Christ's return.

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

***"For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits;  
THAT BLINDNESS IN PART IS HAPPENED TO ISRAEL,  
UNTIL  
THE FULNESS OF THE GENTILES BE COME IN."***

***"And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written,  
There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer,  
AND SHALL TURN AWAY UNGODLINESS FROM JACOB:"  
[old covenant Jews]  
(Romans 11:25-26)***

This is one reason for the delay which is to allow time for the Gentiles to "come in" to the House of Israel by the GRACE of God that is IN Christ Jesus. It is one of the mysteries of God. The word 'FULNESS' means: **completion**, which relates to the Gentiles "coming in" to the House of Israel. As the Gentile or "Church Age" comes to a close, the Lord begins a new millennial age and fulfills His ancient covenants made with Adam, Abraham, Israel and David.

***"When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying,  
LORD, WILT THOU AT THIS TIME  
RESTORE AGAIN THE KINGDOM TO ISRAEL?"***

***"And he said unto them,  
IT IS NOT FOR YOU TO KNOW THE TIMES OR THE SEASONS,  
WHICH THE FATHER HATH PUT IN HIS OWN POWER."***

***"But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."***

***"And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld,  
HE WAS TAKEN UP; AND A CLOUD RECEIVED HIM OUT OF THEIR SIGHT."  
(Acts 1:6-9)***

Jesus' disciples were no doubt familiar with the Scriptures and the coming of their Messiah, but did not seem to know of the mystery of the Gentiles. They also did not have apparent understanding of the return time codes at that time. But it does show the expectancy of the Jew's hope of what they expect from their Messiah. Jesus was specific here that it was not for THEM, (His twelve Disciples) to know, but we find in Scripture those who will know in due time.

## Christ the Redeemer

Jesus gives the basic signs and sequence of events for His return in Matthew 24, Mark 13, and Luke 21. There are a number of interpretations for these chapters, from those who claim these were fulfilled in AD 70, to those who say it is all symbolic, and not to be taken literal. It is not profitable to debate Bible prophecy with these people even though the Jews continue to remain BLIND to the identity of Jesus as their Messiah UNTIL ...

**"BEHOLD, YOUR HOUSE IS LEFT UNTO YOU  
DESOLATE."**  
**"FOR I SAY UNTO YOU, YE SHALL NOT SEE ME HENCEFORTH,  
TILL  
YE SHALL SAY,  
BLESSED IS HE THAT COMETH IN THE NAME OF THE LORD."**  
*(Matthew 23:38-39)*

This saying was placed in a strategic place. It comes just before Matthew 24, the chapter where Jesus told His disciples the sequence of events that involves the TRIBULATION of Israel and the sign of His coming. The word 'DESOLATE' is *eremos* (er'-ay-mos), which means: **deserted, made waste**. Jesus obviously was referring not only to their physical Temple, but to their spiritual condition as well. A condition well suited to their spiritual blindness. When does it say their DESOLATION ends? WHEN THEY **SEE HIM COMING**. This again confirms their land MUST be emptied **BEFORE** Christ returns.

**"AND THEY [ISRAEL] SHALL FALL BY THE EDGE OF THE SWORD,  
AND SHALL BE LED AWAY CAPTIVE INTO ALL NATIONS:  
AND JERUSALEM SHALL BE TRODDEN DOWN OF THE GENTILES,  
UNTIL  
THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES BE FULFILLED."**

**"AND THERE SHALL BE SIGNS IN THE SUN, AND IN THE MOON, AND IN THE  
STARS; AND UPON THE EARTH DISTRESS OF NATIONS, WITH PERPLEXITY;  
THE SEA AND THE WAVES ROARING;"**

**"MEN'S HEARTS FAILING THEM FOR FEAR, AND FOR LOOKING AFTER THOSE  
THINGS WHICH ARE COMING ON THE EARTH: FOR THE POWERS OF  
HEAVEN SHALL BE SHAKEN."**

**"AND THEN  
SHALL THEY SEE THE SON OF MAN COMING IN A CLOUD  
WITH POWER AND GREAT GLORY."**

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

**"AND WHEN  
THESE THINGS BEGIN TO COME TO PASS,  
THEN LOOK UP, AND LIFT UP YOUR HEADS;  
FOR YOUR REDEMPTION DRAWETH NIGH."  
(Luke 21:24-28)**

The first part of Jesus' discourse of Luke 21 is commonly taught as future events earthquakes, famines, and pestilences. Then they say Jesus jumps back to the past 2000 years and claim the invasion of Jerusalem given here was fulfilled in AD 70 by the Roman army. Then they return back to the future for the remainder of Luke 21. It does not dawn on those people that this invasion and destruction of Jerusalem is future as clearly taught in both the Old and New Testaments, (Daniel 9:27; Zech 14:1-4; Rev 11:1-2). Jesus reveals here two great signs we are to watch for at the end of the Gentile age. First is the invasion and destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple, (which must be rebuilt); and second is the sign of His coming in the clouds. Notice several things here. Where does the 'THEN' fall in the sequence of events? AFTER the TRIBULATION of Jerusalem. This is not 1<sup>st</sup> Century events as many believe, THIS IS NEAR FUTURE.

The "times of the Gentiles" is obviously yet completed until the Beast and False Prophet are destroyed. Again, the Scriptures give **5** definite sequence of signs and events:

1. Israel falls as a nation in a surprise invasion by a united nations military force led by the King of Babylon. Jerusalem is taken and the people are killed or exiled, (Zec 14:1-2; Luke 21:20-24);
2. The sun and moon darkens, the stars fall, distress upon the seas and nations;
3. The powers in heaven are shaken, and mega-fear grips the inhabitants of Earth;
4. Christ and many thousands of His angels appear in Earth's atmosphere;
5. Christ removes his elect into the clouds, and begins THE DAY OF HIS WRATH.

Remember this is THE TIME of Christ's completion of redemption. Now compare the following passage carefully. Notice the same **5** parameters of events:

**"IMMEDIATELY AFTER  
[1] THE TRIBULATION OF THOSE DAYS  
[TRIBULATION OF ISRAEL]**

**[2] SHALL THE SUN BE DARKENED,  
AND THE MOON SHALL NOT GIVE HER LIGHT,**



**Christ the Redeemer**

**AND THE STARS SHALL FALL FROM HEAVEN,  
AND THE POWERS OF THE HEAVENS SHALL BE SHAKEN:"**  
**[ARHANGEL MICHAEL CASTS SATAN AND HIS ANGELS DOWN TO EARTH]**

**[3] "AND THEN  
SHALL APPEAR THE SIGN OF THE SON OF MAN IN HEAVEN:**

**[4] AND THEN**  
***shall all the tribes of the earth mourn,***  
**AND THEY SHALL SEE THE SON OF MAN COMING IN THE CLOUDS  
OF HEAVEN WITH POWER AND GREAT GLORY."**

**[5] "AND HE SHALL SEND HIS ANGELS**  
**[FROM THE CLOUDS]**  
**WITH A GREAT SOUND OF A TRUMPET,**  
**[1 COR 15:52; 1 THESS 4:16]**

**AND THEY SHALL GATHER TOGETHER HIS ELECT**  
**[REMOVE THE BRIDE OF CHRIST]**  
**FROM THE FOUR WINDS, FROM ONE END OF HEAVEN TO THE OTHER."**  
**(Matthew 24:29-31)**

The tribulation this refers to is the TRIBULATION of verse 21, the invasion, siege and destruction of modern Israel by the antichrist Beast forces, (Zec 14:2). When this happens, it is a sign that Christ is about to come to redeem His elect who shall be "GATHERED TOGETHER" with Him IN THE CLOUDS because that is where he shall be, (Jn 14:3). The word for "GATHER" is *episunago* (ep-ee-soon-ag'-o), which literally means: **to collect upon the same place, to gather together**. It has the same application as 'RAPTURE'. Therefore, Jesus Himself said this will happen IMMEDIATELY AFTER THE TRIBULATION OF ISRAEL AND JUST PREVIOUS TO THE GREAT TRIBULATION OF THE WRATH OF THE LAMB, (compare Rev 6:12).

Could it be that as Christ approaches Earth, that is when the war in HEAVEN SHALL TAKE PLACE? (Rev 12:7-9) None of Christ's enemies shall be ABOVE Him. Therefore when He comes He must put ALL ENEMIES BENEATH HIS FEET, (Mat 22:44; Mk 12:36; Lu 20:42-43; Acts 2:34-35, 7:49; Heb 1:13, 10:12-13). Seven times is this expression used. The word for 'FOOTSTOOL' is *hupopodion* (hoop-op-od'-ee-on), meaning: **something under the feet**. No enemy can be ABOVE the Lord in power or location.

Remember, before Jesus returns He is with the Father ABOVE this *kosmos* because He is not of this *kosmos*, (John 8:23). The word 'STARS' is often a metaphor in Scripture for princes or ANGELS, (Judges 5:20; Rev 12:4). How else could a 'star' fall to Earth without totally disintegrating our planet?

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

**"AND THERE APPEARED ANOTHER WONDER IN HEAVEN;  
AND BEHOLD A GREAT RED DRAGON, HAVING SEVEN HEADS AND TEN  
HORNS, AND SEVEN CROWNS UPON HIS HEADS."**

**"AND HIS TAIL DREW THE THIRD PART OF  
THE STARS OF HEAVEN,  
AND DID CAST THEM TO THE EARTH...  
(Revelation 12:3-4)**

**"AND THERE WAS WAR IN HEAVEN: MICHAEL AND HIS ANGELS FOUGHT  
AGAINST THE DRAGON; AND THE DRAGON FOUGHT AND HIS ANGELS,"**

**"AND PREVAILED NOT;  
NEITHER WAS THEIR PLACE FOUND ANY MORE IN HEAVEN."**

**"AND THE GREAT DRAGON WAS CAST OUT, THAT OLD SERPENT, CALLED  
THE DEVIL, AND SATAN, WHICH DECEIVETH THE WHOLE WORLD:  
HE WAS CAST OUT INTO THE EARTH, AND HIS ANGELS  
WERE CAST OUT WITH HIM."  
(Revelation 12:7-9)**

**"THEREFORE REJOICE, YE HEAVENS, AND YE THAT DWELL IN THEM.  
WOE TO THE INHABITERS OF THE EARTH AND OF THE SEA!  
FOR THE DEVIL IS COME DOWN UNTO YOU, HAVING GREAT WRATH,  
BECAUSE HE KNOWETH THAT HE HATH BUT A SHORT TIME."  
(Revelation 12:12)**

This explains why hearts shall fail when people witness the great 'shaking' of the principalities and powers of the "prince of the air" being cast down to Earth. Also, isn't it interesting that when Christ's feet are ready to touch down upon the mount of Olives, that Satan will be cast from the surface of the Earth down to the bottomless pit during the 1000 year reign of Christ? (Rev 20:1-3).

Next we find after Christ enters our atmosphere, He sends His angels to gather together His ELECT. The term "GATHER TOGETHER" is typically used in relation to His coming. This is what modern Christianity calls "THE RAPTURE". Paul in 1 Thessalonians reveals that when the Lord descends from heaven, those IN Christ (both asleep in the grave and those alive), go to meet Christ. WHERE? IN THE CLOUDS, (1 Thess 4:17). The words CLOUDS and AIR represent Earth's atmosphere. This is further verified in 2 Thessalonians by the Apostle Paul:

**"Now we beseech you, brethren, [FELLOW CHRISTIANS]  
BY THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST,**

Christ the Redeemer

[DAY OF REDEMPTION AND WRATH OF LAMB]

**AND BY OUR GATHERING TOGETHER UNTO HIM,"**

[RAPTURE' OF HIS CHURCH]

*"That ye **be not soon shaken** in mind, or **be troubled**, neither by spirit,  
nor by word, nor by letter as from us,*

**AS THAT THE DAY OF CHRIST IS AT HAND."**

[FALSE DOCTRINE OF IMMINENCE]

**"LET NO MAN DECEIVE YOU BY ANY MEANS:**

**FOR THAT DAY SHALL NOT COME,**

**EXCEPT**

**[1] THERE COME A FALLING AWAY FIRST,**

**AND**

**[2] THAT MAN OF SIN BE REVEALED, THE SON OF PERDITION;"**

*"Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God,  
or that is worshipped; **SO THAT HE AS GOD***

**SITTETH IN THE TEMPLE OF GOD,**

*showing himself that he is God."*

*(2 Thessalonians 2:1-4)*

Do you see the harmony and confirmation here? Paul is warning the Christian church of Thessalonica **NOT TO BE DECEIVED by false teachings that the return of Christ can happen at any moment.** The phrase "IS AT HAND" is from the Greek word *enistemi* (en-is'-tay-mee), which means: **impending, be instant, come, be at hand, present.** According to the *Random House Unabridged Dictionary*, the word 'impending' is a synonym for IMMINEENT. Paul specifically relates the "Day of Christ" and fellow Christians "GATHERING TOGETHER" (rapture) as the same, does he not? Then he makes it clear that TWO events (SIGNS) **must precede** Christ's coming to gather His elect: (1) a great falling away into apostasy, (i.e. world-wide rejection of Christ, Mat 24:9-14); and (2) **the true identity of the antichrist-Beast will be revealed when he is sitting in God's Temple in Jerusalem.** When does he do this? **AFTER he invades Israel with his united nations military force and takes possession of Jerusalem.**

The redemption-collection of Christ's elect comes IMMEDIATELY AFTER the GREAT TRIBULATION OF ISRAEL, (as Luke 21 indicates), but the redemption for the land and the Jews takes place after His wrath is poured out and He touches down on the Mount of Olives. There is much more to this but the scope here is NOT to debate the various interpretations of

## PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman

Christ's return and 'rapture' doctrines. We are simply taking what Jesus said and see if it matches all legal parameters of redemption and restitution which it does to the letter.

Note that Jesus, (in the Gospel prophecies), said that when we see THE SIGN, that final sign of Him arriving in the clouds **-when the sun and moon darkens, and the stars fall;** THEN our "REDEMPTION IS NIGH", and it is THEN the "gathering together" IS **imminent**. Greek for 'REDEMPTION' in that verse is *apolutrosis* (ap-ol-oo'-tro-sis), and again means: **ransom in full, Christian salvation, deliverance**. All three of these definitions apply and must be fulfilled. The legal aspect of the ransom will be fully met. Christ's bride will have been removed at the beginning of the day of His wrath upon Earth, THEN the door to heaven will SHUT, (Mat 25:10; Luk 4:25; 13:25). After the judgments of Revelation, both surviving Jews and Gentiles (who go on to know the Lord) receive salvation **after** He touches down on Earth, and the Jews are delivered out of bondage of the curses.

All of these verses involving Christ's return are in total harmony and expose the modern doctrine of imminence as FALSE, (which claims there are no signs before Christ returns for His Church, or that Zionist Israel is God's permanent ingathering since 1948). Bible prophecy can be confusing especially when one attempts to compare how the prophecies of the Gospels to those in the book of Revelation. Perhaps the confusion is assuming both are describing the same events, which they are not. They are in a perfect harmonious sequence. Notice how Jesus concludes the prophetic sequence in the Gospels:

*"And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they **SHALL GATHER TOGETHER HIS ELECT** from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."*

*[THE RAPTURE]*

**"NOW LEARN A PARABLE OF THE FIG TREE;**

*When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:"*

*"So likewise ye, **WHEN YE SHALL SEE ALL THESE THINGS,** know that it is near, even at the doors."*

*"VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU,*

**THIS GENERATION SHALL NOT PASS,**

*[THE FIG TREE GENERATION]*

**TILL**

**ALL THESE THINGS**

*[PREVIOUS EVENTS IN THIS CHAPTER]*

**BE FULFILLED."**

*(Matthew 24:31-34)*

## Christ the Redeemer

Jesus concludes His prophetic sequence of events with a TIME CODE PARABLE. The last event He lists is the GATHERING TOGETHER OF HIS ELECT. Does this mean that is the end of a seven year TRIBULATION? No, it does not. There appears to be a misunderstanding concerning the difference between the 70<sup>TH</sup> week of Daniel (i.e. Daniel chapter 9 time code), to Jesus' application of the word 'tribulation' and "great tribulation".

Most prophecy students agree that a 'WEEK' in Daniel's time code is a sabbatical week of seven years, (Lev 25:1-8), and the final week is divided into two half-weeks of 42 months each. Without going into much detail and Scriptural evidence in this study, the first half of Daniel's 70<sup>th</sup> week is not only a time of a false "peace and safety", but also of economic prosperity, the opposite of what tribulation means, (Dan 9:27; Mat 24:38; Luke 17:28, 21:29-30). The Scriptures calls it a time of "PEACE and SAFETY":

**FOR WHEN THEY SHALL SAY, PEACE AND SAFETY;**  
**THEN SUDDEN DESTRUCTION COMETH UPON THEM,**  
**AS TRAVAIL UPON A WOMAN WITH CHILD; AND THEY SHALL NOT ESCAPE.**  
**(1 Thessalonians 5:3)**

The Apostle Paul makes this statement immediately following his famous 'rapture' discourse. The Greek for 'PEACE' is *eirēne* (i-ray'-nay), defined: **eiro (to join); peace by implying prosperity, at peace, quietness, rest, to set at one again.** And 'SAFETY' is *asphaleia* (as-fal'-i-ah); meaning: **security, certainty, safety.** This implies their safety is secure, certain. This condition falls in sequence with the first half of Daniel's seventieth 7 year week, following the confirming of the 7 year covenant involving Israel, (Dan 9:27). Even Psalm 90 says they are SOON CUT-OFF where 'soon' is defined: **quickly, in haste.** In other words, without notice and in complete surprise, (Lam 4:12, 1 Thess 5:3). Jesus said "immediately following the tribulation of THOSE days" shall we see His coming and our gathering together. This is why it is also easy to assume a post seven year tribulation rapture teaching as some do.

Even the "pre-tribulation" believers assume seven years of Revelation type tribulation. And since the elect are to escape the wrath of God, then no Christian is to be on Earth during ANY 'tribulation', they surmise. Also notice in the previous passage of Scripture, Jesus referred twice to "THESE THINGS" in relation to the **Fig Tree generation**, which are the events Jesus listed in His Gospel discourse. But this does not extend to include the judgments of Revelation. It is easily proven the Fig Tree of that parable is an apostate branch of the House of Jacob (Old Covenant Judaism, Hos 9:10) who call themselves after the Holy city: **ZION-ists**, (Isa 48:1-2). Therefore, all the sequence of events Jesus gave in His Gospel prophecy MUST be fulfilled before the passing away of that last Fig Tree generation which ends with His coming and our "gathering together" with Him. This

## **PART 2 - Jesus the Near Kinsman**

compares to the Jews exodus from Egypt where only the new generation born in the wilderness was allowed to enter the promised land.

Perhaps the most important time line for the Lord's return is found in Psalm 90. When does it say the Lord returns? With the last [apostate] generation of the nation Israel that is to be CUT-OFF AND FLY AWAY after 80 years of their existence. Was not the nation [Zionist] Israel officially born in May 1948? And when does the WRATH of Revelation begin? Is it not in Revelation 6:12-17 when **the sun becomes black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon becomes as blood; and the stars of heaven fall unto the earth?** And why would He remove His ELECT during a prosperous time of 42 months before Jerusalem is **made desolate?** (Dan 9:27). And when Christ finally destroys the Beast and False Prophet, does He not set foot on the Earth and take possession of all kingdoms? Is that not when redemption for Israel will be fully realized? Christ's judgments after Revelation 6:12 must occur AFTER the passing of the Fig Tree generation because it is when ALL of Israel will SEE CHRIST'S COMING in the clouds. This sign is the pivot point between the tribulation of Israel and the judgments of Revelation, both of which should occur at the beginning of the second half of Daniel's 70<sup>TH</sup> week.

Thus is the story of redemption and the legal fulfillment of many covenants, promises, and prophecies. The errors of traditional Christian theology is exposed in view of the legal aspect of Scripture. **We have the free will choice** to do as our Redeemer commanded, to enter the strait gate doctrine that leads to LIFE, or reject the counsel of God. We may eat the fruit of knowledge of men and be satisfied, or HUNGER FOR THE TRUTH OF GOD. We can strive to "be all we can be" in Jesus' name, or humble ourselves, even to THE DEATH OF OUR CROSS for the sake of Christ. We can obey Christ and have an awareness of false Christian teachers, or be deceived by their "WISDOM OF WORDS" and dazzled with their displays of "SIGNS AND WONDERS". CHOOSE YOU THIS DAY WHOM YE WILL SERVE: GOD OR MAMMON. BE NOT DECEIVED, GOD IS NOT MOCKED.

**"OPEN THOU MINE EYES,  
THAT I MAY BEHOLD WONDROUS THINGS  
OUT OF THY LAW."  
(Psalms 119:18)**

*~End of Study~*